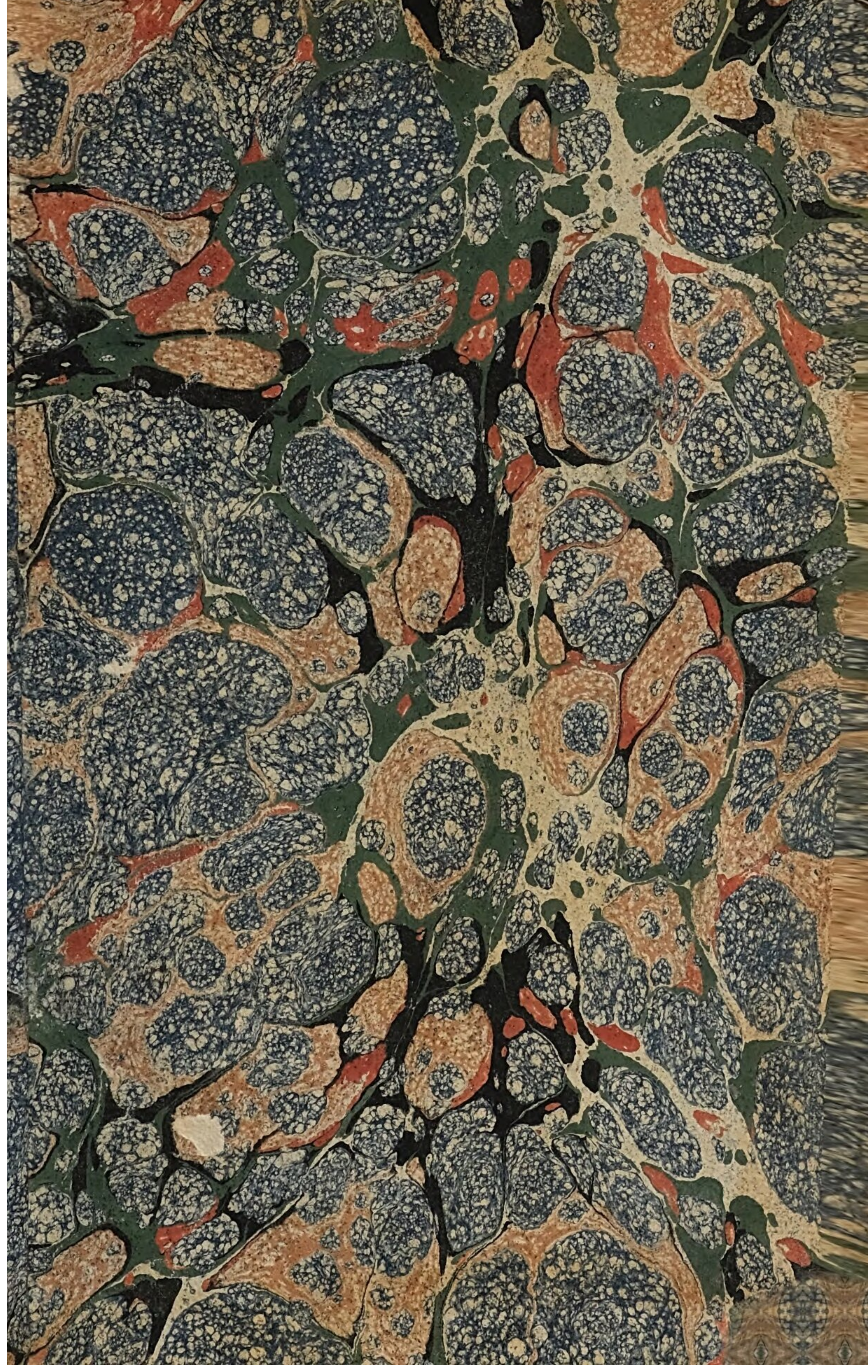






Sold by H. GODWIN, Bookseller,
N^o. 19. Milsom Street, Bath.



L. 9

903^a

2

SOLITUDE:

WRITTEN ORIGINALLY BY

J. G. ZIMMERMAN.

TO WHICH ARE ADDED,

NOTES HISTORICAL AND EXPLANATORY;

A COPIOUS INDEX;

AND

SEVEN BEAUTIFUL ENGRAVINGS

BY RIDLEY.

VOL. II.



London:

Printed by Thomas Maiden, Sherbourn-Lane,

FOR VERNOR AND HOOD, J. CUTHELL, J. WALKER,
LACKINGTON, ALLEN, AND CO. J. NUNN,
OGILVY & SON, DARTON & HARVEY,
W. OTRIDGE AND SON, R. LEA,
AND SCATCHERD AND CO.

1805.

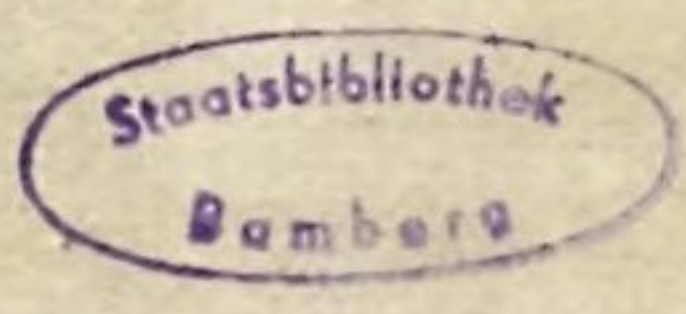
SOLITUDE

A. C. SALMON

WORTH HISTORICAL AND LITERARY

A CONTEMPORARY

BY THE AUTHOR OF "THE HISTORY OF THE ENGLISH LANGUAGE"



FOR THE USE OF THE
LIBRARY OF THE
UNIVERSITY OF
CAMBRIDGE
AND
THE
LIBRARY OF THE
HARVARD
UNIVERSITY

1895

CONTENTS.

	PAGE
CHAP. I. <i>Introduction</i>	I
CHAP. II. <i>Of the Motives to Solitude</i> .	23
CHAP. III. <i>The Disadvantages of Solitude</i>	107
CHAP. IV. <i>The Influence of Solitude on the Imagination</i>	137
CHAP. V. <i>The Effects of Solitude on a Melancholy Mind</i>	173
CHAP. VI. <i>The Influence of Solitude on the Passions</i>	215
CHAP. VII. <i>Of the Danger of Idleness in Solitude</i>	295
CHAP. VIII. <i>The Conclusion</i>	305

CONTENTS

DIRECTIONS FOR PLACING THE PLATES.

	PAGE
Jerome in the Wilderness	89
The Bishop of Assisi throwing his Garment over St. Francis	158
Armelle telling her Rosary	168
Petrarch in Solitude	309

SOLITUDE;

OR,

The pernicious Influence

OF

A TOTAL SECLUSION FROM SOCIETY

UFON

The Mind and the Heart.

CHAPTER THE FIRST.

INTRODUCTION.

SOLITUDE, in its strict and literal acceptation, is equally unfriendly to the happiness and foreign to the nature of mankind. An inclination to exercise the faculty of speech,* to interchange the sentiments of the mind, to indulge

VOL. II. B the

* ARISTOTLE says, that as Nature does nothing in vain, and as man is the only animal whom she hath endued with the privilege of speech, he must have been formed for social delights: an opinion which the celebrated PUFFENDORF has, in common with all writers upon natural law, adopted. "That man," says he, "was designed by nature for a life of society, this alone might be a sufficient argument, that he only, of all living creatures, is endued with the power of expressing his mind to others by articulate sounds; a faculty which, abstracting from the social condition, we cannot conceive to be of any use or advantage to mankind."

the affections of the heart, and to receive themselves, while they bestow on others, a kind assistance and support, drives men, by an ever active, and almost irresistible impulse, from SOLITUDE to SOCIETY; and teaches them that the highest temporal felicity they are capable of enjoying, must be sought for in a suitable union of the sexes, and in a friendly intercourse with their fellow-creatures.* The profoundest deductions of reason, the highest flights of fancy, the finest sensibilities of the heart, the happiest discoveries

* “Man,” says a profound philosopher, “is an animal extremely desirous of his own preservation; of himself exposed to many wants, unable to secure his own safety and maintenance without the assistance of his fellows, and capable of returning the kindness by the furtherance of mutual good. But then he is often malicious, insolent, easily provoked, and as powerful in effecting mischief as he is ready in designing it. Now that such a creature may be preserved and supported, and may enjoy the good things attending his condition of life, it is necessary that he should be *social*; that is, that he should unite himself to those of his own species, and in such a manner regulate his behaviour towards them, as they may have no fair reason to do him harm; but rather incline to promote his interests, and to secure his rights and concerns. It seems, therefore, to be a fundamental law of nature, that *every man ought, as far as in him lies, to promote and preserve a peaceful sociableness with others, agreeable to the main end and disposition of the human race*: that is, such a disposition of one man towards all others, as shall unite him to them by benevolence, by peace, by charity, and, as it were, by a silent and secret obligation.”

discoveries of science, and the most valuable productions of art, are feebly felt, and imperfectly enjoyed, in the cold and cheerless region of Solitude. It is not to the senseless rock, or to the passing gale, that we can satisfactorily communicate our pleasures and our pains.* The heavy sighs which incessantly transpire from the vacant bosoms of the solitary hermit, and the surly misanthropist, indicate the absence of those high delights which ever accompany congenial sentiment and mutual affection.† The soul sinks under a situation in which there are no kindred bosoms to participate its joys, and sympathize in its sorrows; and feels, strongly feels, that the beneficent Creator has so framed and moulded the temper of our minds, that SOCIETY is the ear-

B 2

liest

* CICERO, reasoning upon the principles of *the Stoics*, insists that “no man would choose to live in absolute Solitude, although he might enjoy an infinity of pleasures.”

† “He who, disgusted, quits the social scene,
 “And trees and beasts prefer to courts and men,
 “In the remotest glen, or loneliest grot,
 “Still meets the spectre of distempered thought.
 “His mind as dreary as the pathless woods;
 “His breast as turb’lent as descending floods;
 “His heart with strong and raging passions torn;
 “No sweet companion near, with whom to mourn:
 “The echoing rocks return his fruitless sighs,
 “And from himself th’ unhappy HERMIT flies.”

liest impulse and the most powerful inclination of our hearts.

“ Unhappy he! who from the first of joys,
 “ SOCIETY, cut off, is left alone
 “ Amid this world of death——”

Society, however, although it is thus pointed out to us, as it were, by the finger of the Almighty, as the means of reaching our highest possible state of earthly felicity, is so pregnant with dangers, that it depends entirely on ourselves, whether the indulgence of this instinctive propensity shall be productive of happiness or misery.

“ ————— all have cause to smile,
 “ But such as to themselves that cause deny.
 “ Our faults are at the bottom of our pains ;
 “ Error, in acts or judgment, is the source
 “ Of endless sorrow———”

The pleasures of Society, like pleasures of every other kind, must, to be pure and permanent, be temperate and discreet. While passion animates, and sensibility cherishes, reason must direct, and virtue be the object of our course. Those who search for happiness in a vague, desultory, and indiscriminate intercourse with the world; who imagine the palace of Pleasure

sure

sure to be surrounded by the gay, unthinking, and volatile part of the species; who conceive that the rays of all human delight beam from places of public festivity and resort;

“ Who all their joys in mean profusion waste
“ Without reflection, management, or taste;
“ Careless of all that VIRTUE gives to please;
“ For thought too active, and too mad for ease;
“ Who give each appetite too loose a rein,
“ Push all enjoyments to the verge of pain;
“ Impetuous follow where THE PASSIONS call,
“ And live in rapture, or not live at all;

will, instead of lasting and satisfactory fruition, meet only with sorrowful disappointment. This mode of seeking society is not a rational indulgence of that natural passion which heaven, in its benevolence to man, has planted in the human heart; but merely a factitious desire, an habitual pruriency, produced by restless leisure, and encouraged by vanity and dissipation. SOCIAL HAPPINESS, true and essential social happiness, resides only in the bosom of LOVE and in the arms of FRIENDSHIP; and can only be really enjoyed by congenial hearts, and kindred minds, in the domestic bowers of privacy and retirement. Affectionate intercourse produces an inexhaustible fund of delight; it is the perennial sunshine of the mind. With what extreme anxiety do we

all endeavour to find an amiable being, with whom we may form a tender tie and close attachment, who may inspire us with unfading bliss, and receive increase of happiness from our endearments and attention ! How greatly do such connections increase the kind and benevolent dispositions of the heart ! and how greatly do such dispositions, while they lead the mind to the enjoyment of domestic happiness, awaken all the virtues, and call forth the best and strongest energies of the soul ! Deprived of the chaste and endearing sympathies of LOVE and FRIENDSHIP, the species sink into gross sensuality or mute indifference, neglect the improvement of their faculties, and renounce all anxiety to please ; but incited by these propensities, the sexes mutually exert their powers, cultivate their talents, call every intellectual energy into action ; and, by endeavouring to promote each other's happiness, mutually secure their own.

“ As bees mix'd nectar draw from fragrant flowers,
 “ So man from FRIENDSHIP wisdom and delight ;
 “ Twins tied by Nature ; if they part, they die.
 “ Hast thou no friend to set thy mind abroad ?
 “ Good sense will stagnate: thoughts shut up, want air,
 “ And spoil, like bales unopen'd to the sun.
 “ Had thought been all, sweet *speech* had been denied:

“ It

- “ It ventilates our intellectual fires,
“ And burnishes the mental magazine ;
“ Brightens for ornament, and whets for use.
“ 'Tis converse qualifies for SOLITUDE,
“ As exercise for salutary rest.
“ Nature, in zeal for human amity,
“ Denies or damps all *undivided* joy.
“ Joy flies monopolists ; it calls for *two*.
“ Rich fruit ! heav'n-planted ; never pluck'd by *one*.
“ Needful auxiliaries are our *friends*, to give
“ To SOCIAL MAN true relish of himself.

Adverse circumstances, however, frequently prevent well-disposed characters not only from making the election which their hearts would prompt, and their understandings approve, but force them into alliances which both reason and sensibility reject. It is from the disappointments of love, or of ambition, that the sexes are generally repelled from Society to Solitude. The affection, the tenderness, the sensibility of the heart, are but too often torn and outraged by the cruelty and malevolence of an unfeeling world, in which Vice bears on its audacious front the mask of Virtue, and betrays INNOCENCE into the snares of unsuspected GUILT. The victims, however, whether of LOVE or of AMBITION, who retire from Society to recruit their depressed spirits, and repair their disordered minds, cannot, without injustice, be stigmatized as misanthropists, or

arraigned as anti-social characters. All relish for scenes of social happiness may be lost by an extreme and over-ardent passion for the enjoyments of them ; but it is only those who seek retirement from an aversion to the company of their fellow-creatures, that can be said to have renounced, or be destitute of, the common sympathies of nature.

The present age, however, is not likely to produce many such unnatural characters ; for the manners of the whole world, and particularly of Europe, were never, perhaps, more disposed to company. The rage for public entertainments seems to have infected all the classes of society. The pleasures of private life seem to be held in universal detestation and contempt ; opprobrious epithets defame the humble enjoyments of domestic love ; and those whose hours are not consumed in unmeaning visits, or unsocial parties, are regarded as censors of the common conduct of the world, or as enemies to their fellow creatures : But, although mankind appear so extremely social, they certainly were never less friendly and affectionate. Neither rank, nor sex, nor age, is free from this pernicious habit. Infants, before they can well lisp the rudiments of speech, are initiated into the idle ceremonies and parade of company ; and can scarcely meet their
parents

parents, or their playmates, without being obliged to perform a punctilious salutation. Formal card-parties, and petty treats, engross the time that should be devoted to healthful exercise and manly recreation. The manners of the metropolis are imitated with inferior splendor, but with greater absurdity, in the country : every village has its routs and its assemblies, in which the curled darlings of the place blaze forth in feathered lustre and awkward magnificence ; and while the charming simplicity of one sex is destroyed by affectation, the honest virtues of the other by dissolute gallantry, and the passions of both inflamed by vicious and indecent mirth, the grave elders of the districts are trying their tempers, and impoverishing their purses, at six-penny whist and cassino.

“ ————— all deem
 “ One moment unamus’d a misery
 “ Not made for feeble man ; all call aloud
 “ For every bauble drivell’d o’er by sense,
 “ For rattles and conceits of every cast,
 “ For change of follies, and relays of joys,
 “ To drag them through the tedious length
 “ Of a short winter’s day.”

The spirit of dissipation has reached even the vagrant tribe. The Gipsies of Germany suspend their predatory excursions, and on one previously appointed evening in every week, assemble to

enjoy their guilty spoils in the fumes of strong waters and tobacco. The place of rendezvous is generally the vicinity of a mill, the proprietor of which, by affording to these wandering tribes an undisturbed asylum, not only secures his property from their depredations, but, by the idle tales with which they contrive to amuse his ear, respecting the characters and conduct of his neighbours, furnishes himself with new subjects of conversation for his next evening's coterie.

Minds that derive all their pleasures from the levity and mirth of promiscuous company, are seldom able to contribute, in any high degree, to their own amusement. Characters like these search every place for entertainment, except their own bosoms, and the bosoms of their surrounding families, where, by proper cultivation, real happiness, the happiness arising from LOVE and FRIENDSHIP, is alone capable of being found.

From LOVE and FRIENDSHIP, flowers of heav'nly
feed,

The wise extract earth's most Hyblean bliss,
Superior wisdom, crown'd with smiling joy.
But for whom blossoms these Elysian flowers?
ABROAD they find who cherish them at HOME.
Of all the follies which o'erwhelm THE GREAT,
None clings more closely than the fancy fond,
That SACRED FRIENDSHIP is their easy prey,
Caught by the wafure of a golden lure,

Or

Or fascination of a high-born smile.

Oh! sad mistake! Ye powers of wealth,

Can GOLD buy FRIENDSHIP? Impudence of hope!

LOVE, and LOVE only, is the loan of LOVE.

Repress such worldly thoughts; nor hope to find

A FRIEND, but what has found a A FRIEND in thee.

All like the purchase; few the price will pay:

And this makes FRIENDS such *miracles* below.

The wearied pleasurer, sinking under the weight that preys upon his spirits, flies to scenes of public gaiety or private splendor, in fond, but vain, expectation, that they will dispel his discontent, and recreate his mind; but he finds, alas! that the fancied asylum affords him no rest. The ever-craving appetite for pastime grows by what it feeds on; and the worm, which devoured his delight amidst the sylvan scenery of Solitude, still accompanies him to crowded halls of elegance and festivity. While he eagerly embraces every object that promises to supply the direful vacancy of his mind, he exhausts its remaining strength; enlarges the wound he is so anxiously endeavouring to heal; and, by too eagerly grasping at the phantom Pleasure, loses, perhaps for ever, the substantial power of being happy.

Men whose minds are capable of higher enjoyments, always feel these perturbed sensations, when, deluded into a fashionable party,

they find nothing to excite curiosity or interest their feelings ; and where they are pestered by the frivolous importunities of those for whom they cannot entertain either friendship or esteem. How, indeed, is it possible for a sensible mind to feel the slightest approbation, when a coxcomb, enamoured of his own eloquence, and swollen with the pride of self-conceited merit, tires, by his loquacious nonsense, all around him ?

The great LEIBNITZ* was observed by his servant frequently to take notes while he sat in church, and the domestic very rationally conceived that he was making observations on the subject of the sermon ; but it is more consistent with the character of this philosopher to conclude, that he was indulging the powers of his
own

* *William Godefroi*, Baron de Leibnitz, the son of *Frederick Leibnitz*, Professor of Moral Philosophy in the University of *Leipsig*, was born at *Leipsig*, in Saxony, on the 23d of June, 1646. He was one of those rare productions upon whom Nature had profusely bestowed her richest gifts. His capacious mind was saturated and adorned with every species of literature. The arts and sciences were equally at his command. The poets, orators, historians, lawyers, divines, philosophers, and mathematicians, furnished him with their choicest stores. He reconciled PLATO with ARISTOTLE, and ARISTOTLE with DES CARTES. But the study of the law was his principal object, and in which he attained to an uncommon degree of excellence. He died on the 14th of November, 1716.

own capacious and excursive mind, when those of the preacher ceased to interest him. Thus it happens, that while the multitude are driven from Solitude to Society, by being tired of themselves, there are some, and those not a few, who seek refuge in rational retirement from the frivolous dissipation of company.

An indolent mind is as irksome to itself as it is intolerable to others ; but an active mind finds inexhaustible resources in its own power. The first is forced to fly from itself for enjoyment ; while the other calmly resigns itself to its own suggestions, and always meets with the happiness it has vainly sought for in its communion with the world.

“ —————The man who consecrates his hours
 “ By vig’rous effort and an honest aim,
 “ At once draws out the sting of life and death,
 “ And walks with Nature in the paths of Peace.
 “ But thoughtless, giddy, inconsistent man,
 “ Like children babbling nonsense in their sports,
 “ Cenfures kind Nature for a span too short,
 “ And feels the span so short quite tedious too ;
 “ Tortures invention ; all expedients tires
 “ To lash the ling’ring moments into speed,
 “ And whirl them, happy riddance! from themselves.”*

To

* “ Quite jaded with protracted amusements,” says a celebrated moral writer, “ we yawn over them. The dull drone of
 “ nominal

To rouse the soul from that lethargy into which its powers are so apt to drop from the tediousness of life, it is necessary to apply a stimulus both to the head and to the heart. Something must be contrived to strike the senses and interest the mind. But it is much more difficult to convey pleasure to others than to receive it ourselves; and while the many wait in anxious hope of being entertained, they find but few who

“ nominal diversion still hums on when the short tune of enjoyment is over. Like the bear in the fable, we hug our darling to death. Instead of rejoicing in tribulation, we sorrow in delight: for this eternal round of vanities is trod less for the pleasure it brings than for the pain it suspends. It is a refuge, not a prize. Like criminals, we fly to it from our much-injured, unfortunate foes, OURSELVES; which chide and sting us when alone: when together, we support each others spirits; which is like sailors clinging to each other for safety when the vessel is sinking. In the boundless field of licentiousness, some bastard joys may rise that look gay, more especially at a distance; but they soon wither. No joys are always sweet, and flourish long, but such as have self-approbation for their root, and the divine favour for their shelter: but we are for joys of our own creation, the seeds of which heaven never sowed in our hearts. But we may as well invade another prerogative of heaven, and, with the tyrant of *Elis*, pretend to make thunder and lightning, as real joy. I say real joy; for joy we may make, but not *cheerfulness*. Joy may subsist without thought; Cheerfulness will frame it. Joy is from the pulse; Cheerfulness from the heart. THAT may give a momentary flash of pleasure; THIS alone makes a happy man.”

who are capable of entertaining. Disappointment increases the energies of desire; and the uneasy multitude rush to places of public resort, endeavouring, by noise and bustle, festive gratification, elegant decoration, rich dresses, splendid illuminations, sportive dances, and sprightly music, to awaken the dormant faculties, and agitate the stagnant sensibilities of the soul. These scenes may be considered the machineries of Pleasure; they produce a temporary effect, without requiring much effort or co-operation to obtain it; while those higher delights of which retirement is capable, cannot be truly enjoyed without a certain degree of intellectual exertion. There are, indeed, many minds so totally corrupted by the unceasing pursuits of these vain and empty pleasures, that they are utterly incapable of relishing intellectual delight; which, as it affords an enjoyment totally unconnected with, and independent of, common society, requires a disposition and capacity which common company can never bestow. Retirement, therefore, and its attendant enjoyments, are of a nature too refined for the gross and vulgar capacities of the multitude, who are more disposed to gratify their intellectual indolence by receiving a species of entertainment which does not require from them the exertion of thought, than to enjoy pleasures

pleasures of a nobler kind, which can only be procured by a rational restraint of the passions, and a proper exercise of the powers of the mind. Violent and tumultuous impressions can alone gratify such characters, whose pleasures, like those of the slothful *Sybarites*, only indicate the pain they undergo in striving to be happy: but

Were all men happy, revellings would cease,
That opiate for inquietude within.
No man was ever truly blest,
But it compos'd, and gave him such a cast
As FOLLY might mistake for want of JOY;
A cast unlike the triumph of the proud;
A modest aspect and a smiling heart;
A spring perennial rising in the breast,
And permanent as pure! No turbid stream
Of rapt'rous exultation, swelling high,
Which, like land floods, impetuous flow awhile,
Then sink at once, and leave us in the mire.
What does the man who transient joy prefers,
What, but prefer the bubbles to the stream?
Vain are all sudden fallies of delight,
Convulsions of a weak distemper'd joy.
JOY's a fixt state, a tenure, not a start.
The weak have REMEDIES; the wise have JOYS.
The first sure symptoms of a mind in health,
Is rest of heart, and pleasures felt at home.

Men, eager for the enjoyment of worldly pleasures, seldom attain the object they pursue. Dissatisfied with the enjoyments of the moment,
they

they long for some absent delight, which seems to promise a more poignant gratification. Their joys are like those of TANTALUS, always in view, but never within reach. The activity of such characters leads to no beneficial end: they are perpetually in motion, without making any progress: they spur on “the lazy foot of TIME;” and then complain of the rapidity of its flight, only because they have made no good use of its presence: They “take no note of time, but by its loss:” and year follows year, only to increase their uneasiness. If the bright beam of Aurora wake them from their perturbed repose, it is only to create new anxieties how they are to drag through the passing day. The change of seasons produces no change in their wearied dispositions; and every hour comes and goes with equal indifference and discontent.

The pleasures of Society, however, although they are attended with such unhappy effects, and pernicious consequences, to men of weak heads and corrupted hearts, who only follow them for the purpose of indulging the follies, and gratifying the vices, to which they have given birth, are yet capable of affording to THE WISE and THE VIRTUOUS, a high, rational, sublime, and satisfactory enjoyment. The world is the only theatre upon which great and noble actions can
be

be performed, or the heights of moral and intellectual excellence usefully attained. The society of the WISE and GOOD, exclusive of the pleasing relaxation it affords from the anxieties of business, and the cares of life, conveys valuable information to the mind, and virtuous feelings to the breast. There experience imparts its wisdom in a manner equally engaging and impressive; the faculties are improved; and knowledge increased. Youth and age reciprocally contribute to the happiness of each other. Such a society, while it adds firmness to the character, gives fashion to the manners; and opens immediately to the view, the delightful models of wisdom and integrity. It is only in such society that man can rationally hope to exercise, with any prospect of success, that *latent principle*, which continually prompts him to pursue the *high felicity* of which he feels his nature capable, and of which the Creator has permitted him to form a faint idea.

“ In every human heart there lies reclin’d
 “ Some atom pregnant with ethereal mind;
 “ Some plastic power, some intellectual ray,
 “ Some genial sun-beam from the source of day;
 “ Something that warms, and, restless to aspire,
 “ Wakes the young heart, and sets the soul on fire;
 “ And bids us all our inborn powers employ
 “ To catch the phantom of ideal Joy.”

SORROW

SORROW frequently drives its unhappy victims from Solitude into the vortex of Society as a means of relief ; for Solitude is terrible to those whose minds are torn with anguish for the loss of some dear friend, whom death has, perhaps, taken untimely from their arms ; and who would willingly renounce all worldly joys, to hear one accent of that beloved voice which used, in calm retirement, to fill his ear with harmony, and his heart with rapture.

SOLITUDE also is terrible to those whose felicity is founded on popular applause ; who have acquired a degree of fame by intrigue, and actions of counterfeited virtue ; and who suffer the most excruciating anxiety to preserve their spurious fame. Conscious of the fraudulent means by which they acquired possession of it, and of the weak foundation on which it is built, it appears continually to totter, and always ready to overwhelm them in its ruins. Their attention is sedulously called to every quarter ; and, in order to prop up the unsubstantial fabric, they bend with mean submission to the pride of power ; flatter the vanity, and accommodate themselves to the vices, of THE GREAT ; censure the genius that provokes their jealousy ; ridicule the virtue that shames the conduct of their patrons ; submit to all the follies of the age ; take advantage

tage of its errors ; cherish its prejudices ; applaud its superstition, and defend its vices. The fashionable circles may, perhaps, welcome such characters as their best supporters, and highest ornaments ; but to them the calm and tranquil pleasures of retirement are dreary and disgusting.

To all those, indeed, whom VICE has betrayed into GUILT, and whose bosoms are stung by the adders of REMORSE, Solitude is doubly terrible ; and they fly from its shades to scenes of worldly pleasure, in the hope of being able to silence the keen reproaches of violated conscience in the tumults of Society.—Vain attempt !

“ GUILT is the source of SORROW ! ’tis the fiend,
 “ Th’ avenging fiend, that follows them behind
 “ With whips and stings. The blest know none of this,
 “ But rest in everlasting peace of mind,
 “ And find the height of all their heaven is GOOD-
 NESS.”

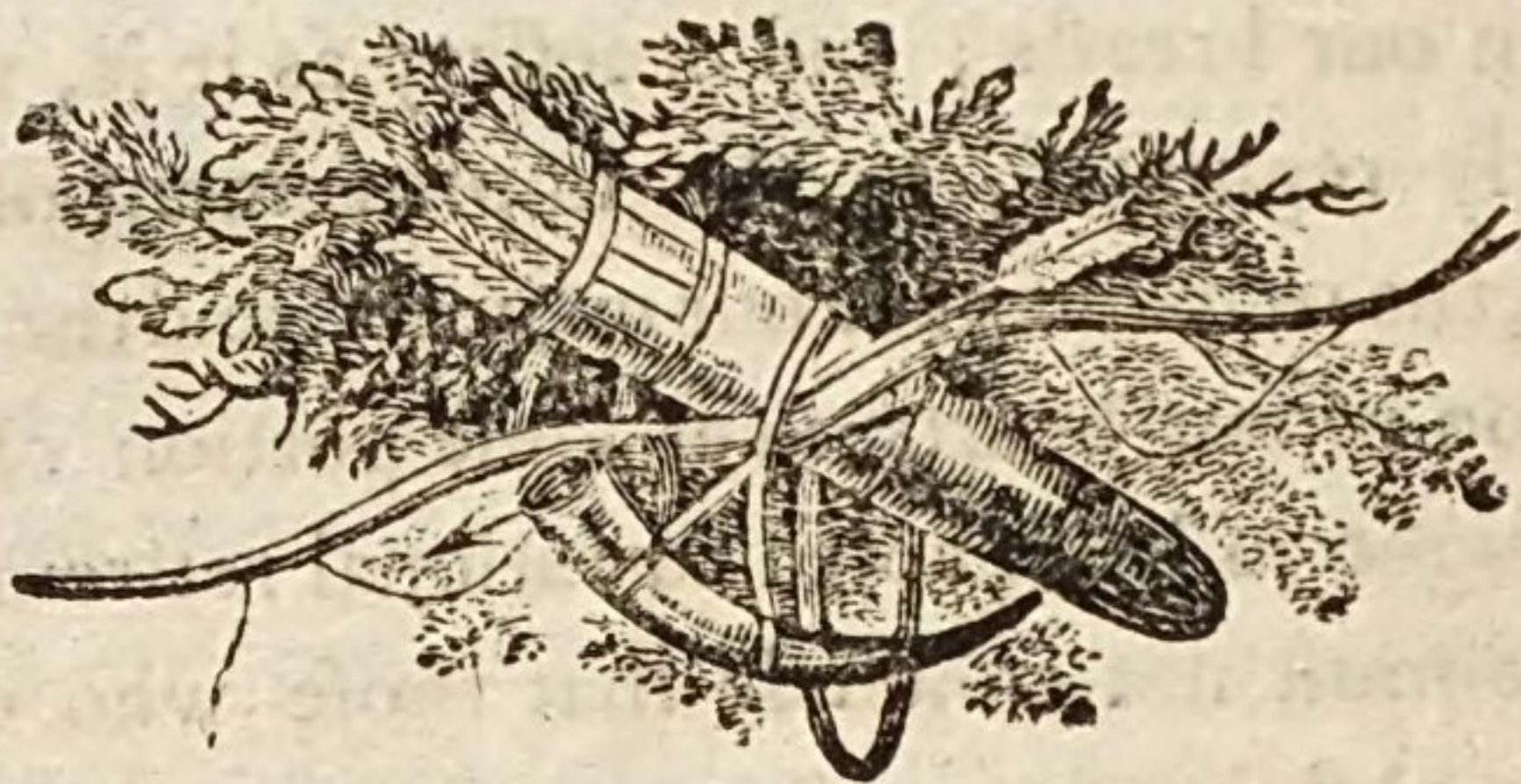
SOLITUDE, indeed, as well as RELIGION, has been represented in such dismal, disagreeable colours, by those who were incapable of tasting its sweets, and enjoying its advantages, that many dismiss it totally from all their schemes of happiness, and fly to it only to alleviate the bitterness of some momentary passion, or temporary adversity, or to hide the blushes of approaching shame. But there are advantages to be derived
 from

from Solitude even under such circumstances, by those who are otherwise incapable of enjoying them. Those who know the most delightful comforts, and satisfactory enjoyments, of which a well-regulated Solitude is productive, like those who are acquainted with the solid benefits to be derived from RELIGION, will seek Retirement, in the hours of prosperity and content, as the only means by which they can be enjoyed in true perfection. The tranquillity of its shades will give richness to their joys ; its uninterrupted quietude will enable them to expatiate on the fulness of their felicity ; and they will turn their eyes with soft compassion on the miseries of the world when compared with the blessings they enjoy.

Strongly, therefore, as the *social principle* operates in our breasts ; and necessary as it is, when properly regulated, to the improvement of our minds, the refinement of our manners, and the amelioration of our hearts ; yet some portion of our time ought to be devoted to rational retirement : and we must not conclude that those who occasionally abstain from the tumultuous pleasures, and promiscuous enjoyments, of the world, are morose characters, or of peevish dispositions ; nor stigmatize those who appear to prefer the calm delights of Solitude to the tumultuous pleasures of the world, as unnatural and anti-social.

“ Whoever

“Whoever thinks, must see that man was made
“To face the storm, not languish in the shade:
“Action’s his sphere, and for that sphere design’d,
“Eternal pleasures open on his mind.
“For this fair Hope leads on th’ impassion’d soul
“Thro’ life’s wild lab’rinths to her distant goal;
“Paints in each dream, to fan the genial flame,
“The pomp of riches, and the pride of fame;
“Or fondly gives Reflection’s cooler eye
“In SOLITUDE, an image of a future sky.”



CHAPTER THE SECOND.

OF

THE MOTIVES TO SOLITUDE.

THE motives which induce men to exchange the tumultuous joys of Society for the calm and temperate pleasures of Solitude are various and accidental ; but whatever may be the final cause of such an exchange, it is generally founded on an inclination to escape from some present or impending constraint ; to shake off the shackles of the world ; to taste the sweets of soft repose ; to enjoy the free and undisturbed exertion of the intellectual faculties ; or to perform, beyond the reach of ridicule, the important duties of religion. But the busy pursuits of worldly-minded men prevent the greater part of the species from feeling these motives, and, of course, from tasting the sweets of unmolested existence. Their pleasures are pursued in paths which lead to very different goals : and the real, constant, unaffected lover of Retirement is a character so rarely found, that it seems to prove the truth of LORD VERULAM'S * observation, that he who is really attached

* LORD BACON says, " It would have been hard for him who spoke it, to put more truth and untruth together in as

attached to SOLITUDE, must be either more or less than man ; and certain it is, that while the WISE and VIRTUOUS discover in Retirement an uncommon and transcending brightness of character, the VICIOUS and the IGNORANT are buried under its weight, and sink even beneath their ordinary level. Retirement gives additional firmness to the principles of those who seek it from a noble love of independence, but loosens the

few words, than in that speech, ‘ *Whoever is delighted in SOLITUDE, is either a wild beast or a god.*’ For it is most true, that a natural and secret hatred and aversion toward society in any man hath somewhat of the savage beast : but it is most untrue, that it should have any character at all of the Divine nature ; except it proceed, not out of a pleasure in Solitude, but out of a love and desire to sequester a man’s self for a higher conversation ; such as is found to have been falsely and feignedly in some of the heathens ; as *Epimenides*, the Arcadian ; *Numa*, the Roman ; *Empedocles*, the Sicilian ; and *Appollonius*, of Tyana ; and truly and really in divers of the ancient hermits and holy fathers of the church. But little do men perceive what SOLITUDE is, and how far it extendeth : for a crowd is not company ; and faces are but gallery pictures ; and talk but a tinkling cymbal, where there is no love. The Latin adage meeteth with it a little : “ *Magna civitas, magna solitudo ;*” because in a great town friends are scattered, so that there is not that fellowship for the most part, which is in less neighbourhoods. But we may go farther, and affirm most truly, that it is a mere and miserable Solitude to want true friends, without which the world is but a wilderness ; and even in this sense also of Solitude, whoever in the frame of his nature and affections is unfit for friendship, he taketh it of the beast, and not from humanity.”

the feeble consistency of those who only seek it from novelty and caprice.

To render Solitude serviceable, the powers of the mind, and the sensibilities of the heart, must be co-equal, and reciprocally regulate each other: weakness of intellect, when joined with quick feelings, hurries its possessor into all the tumult of worldly pleasure; and when mingled with torpid insensibility, impels him to the cloister. Extremes both in Solitude and in Society are equally baneful.

A strong sense of shame, the keen compunctions of conscience, a deep regret for past follies, the mortification arising from disappointed hopes, and the dejection which accompanies disordered health, sometimes so affect the spirits, and destroy the energies of the mind, that the soul shrinks back upon itself at the very approach of company, and withdraws to the shades of Solitude, only to bleed and languish in obscurity. The inclination to retire, in cases of this description, arises from a fear of meeting the reproaches or disregard of an un pitying and reflecting world, and not from that erect spirit which disposes the mind to self-enjoyment.*

VOL. II.

C

The

* "It may be laid down (says a celebrated writer) as a position which will seldom deceive, that, when a man cannot bear his

The disgust arising from satiety of worldly pleasures frequently induces a temporary desire for Solitude. The dark and gloomy nature, indeed, of this disposition is such, as neither the splendors of a throne, nor the light of philosophy, are able to irradiate and dispel. The austere and petulant HERACLITUS* abandoned all the

own company, there is something wrong. He must fly from himself, either because he feels a tediousness in life from the equipoise of an empty mind, which having no tendency to one notion more than another, but as it is impelled by some external power, must always have recourse to foreign objects; or he must be afraid of the intrusion of some unpleasing ideas, and perhaps is struggling to escape from the remembrance of a loss, the fear of a calamity, or some other thought of greater horrors. Those whom sorrow incapacitates to enjoy the pleasures of contemplation, may properly apply to such diversions, provided they are innocent, as lay strong hold on the attention; and those whom fear of any future affliction chain down to misery, must endeavour to obviate the danger. But there are those who are burthenome to themselves merely because they want subjects for reflection, and to whom the volume of nature is thrown open, without offering them pleasure or instruction, because they never learned to read the characters.

* HERACLITUS, the celebrated Grecian philosopher, was a native of Ephesus, and flourished about five hundred years before the Christian æra. His melancholy and dejected mind forced him incessantly to lament, and frequently to weep over, the miseries and depravity of human nature. This disposition, which he indulged to a ridiculous excess, joined to an enigmatical manner of expressing himself, procured him the appellation of

the pleasure and comforts of society, in the vain hope of being able to gratify his discontented
 C 2 mind,

of *The obscure and crying Philosopher*. “What is man?” he exclaimed: “What his boasted reason? His knowledge is mere ignorance; his grandeur, littleness; his strength, weakness; and his joy, grief.” But, notwithstanding this opinion, he maintained that life was the gift of the Great Creator; that it ought to be preserved with the greatest anxiety and care; that it cannot be disposed of at the caprice of its owner; and that man must wait, and patiently endure all the ills that flesh is heir to, until it shall please the Almighty to call him to the great account for all his actions. HERACLITUS composed many excellent works, particularly a Treatise upon the ELEMENTS OF NATURE. Of this work EURIPIDES sent a copy to SOCRATES, who, on returning it, observed, that those parts which he was capable of comprehending were excellent, and that he had no doubt that those which were above his comprehension were equally good. DARIUS, the king of Persia, on perusing this production, wrote a highly complimentary letter to the author, and pressed him in the warmest manner to visit the Persian court, where his merits and abilities would be better understood and received than they had been in Greece; but the sullen and austere philosopher furlily rejected all the elegant and polite overtures of the monarch. It is said that the acerbity of his temper was increased to such a degree by his occasional intercourse with mankind, that he at length conceived an unalterable antipathy to the species, and retired to a cheerless and inhospitable mountain, where he lived for many years, in common with the beasts of the field, upon the scanty herbage of the earth. Having, however, by this mode of living, contracted a dropfy, he once more descended into the neighbouring cities, and consulted the faculty, in his enigmatical way, respecting the cure of his distemper, by inquiring whether their art enabled them

mind, by indulging an antipathy against his fellow-creatures : flying from their presence, he retired, like his predecessor TIMON, to a high mountain, where he lived for many years among the beasts of the desert, on the rude produce of the earth, regardless of all the comforts civilized society is capable of bestowing. Such a temper of mind proceeds from a sickened intellect and disordered sensibility, and indicates the loss of that fine, but firm, sense of pleasure, from which alone all real enjoyment must spring. He who having tasted all that can delight the senses, warm the heart, and satisfy the mind, secretly sighs over the vanity of his enjoyments, and beholds all the cheering objects of life with indifference,

them to *dry up a deluge*; but the physician not satisfying his question, he inclosed himself in a dunghill, under an idea that its artificial heat would dispel the superabundant moisture which had caused his complaint. After repeated experiments, he quitted, with regret, at the age of sixty, the world he had so much affected to despise. The Ephesians expressed their astonishment when they first beheld this great man playing at marbles with children : “ I had rather,” said he, “ amuse myself thus than have the management of your affairs.” He used to say, that “ quarrels ought to be stifled, like fires, the moment they break out;” that “ it is more excusable for a people to fight for the preservation of their *laws* than their *lives*; and that the nature of the human soul is inscrutable.” Some fragments of the works of this extraordinary man still remain; they were published, together with those of DEMOCRITUS and TIMON, by Henry Stephens, in octavo, in the year 1573, under the title *Œſis Philosophica*.

indifference, is, indeed, a melancholy example of the sad effects which result from an intemperate pursuit of worldly pleasures. Such a man may perhaps abandon society, for it is no longer capable of affording him delight; but he will be debarred from all rational solitude, because he is incapable of enjoying it; and a refuge with the brute creation seems his only resource. I have, indeed, observed even noblemen and princes, in the midst of abundance, and surrounded by all the splendour that successful ambition, high state, vast riches, and varying pleasures can confer, sinking the sad victims of satiety; disgusted with their glories; and dissatisfied with all those enjoyments which are supposed to give a higher relish to the soul: but they had happily enriched their minds with notions far superior to all those which flow from the corrupted scenes of vitiated pleasures; and they found in Solitude a soft and tranquil pillow, which invited their perturbed minds, and at length lulled their feelings into calm repose. These characters were betrayed for a time by the circumstances which surrounded their exalted stations into an excess of enjoyment; but they were able to relish the simple occupations, and to enjoy the tranquil amusements of Retirement, with as much satisfaction as they had formerly pursued the political intrigues of the cabinet, the hostile glories of the field, or the softer indulgences of

peaceful luxury, and were thereby rendered capable of deriving comfort and consolation from that source which seems only to heighten and exasperate the miseries of those whose minds are totally absorbed in the dissipations of life.*

The motives, indeed, which lead men either to temporary Retirement, or absolute Solitude, are innumerably various. Minds delicately susceptible to the impressions of virtue, frequently avoid society, only to avoid the pain they feel in observing the vices and follies of the world. Minds active and vigorous, frequently retire to
avoid

* The love of Retirement (says Dr. JOHNSON) has in all ages adhered closely to those minds which have been most enlarged or elevated by genius. Those who enjoyed every thing generally supposed to confer happiness, have been found to seek it in the shades of privacy. Though they possessed both power and riches, and were therefore surrounded by men who considered it as their chief interest to remove from them every thing that might offend their ease, or interrupt their pleasures, they have found themselves unable to pursue the race of life without frequent respirations of intermediate SOLITUDE. Nor will greatness or abundance exempt him from the importunities of this desire, since, if he is born to think, he cannot restrain himself from a thousand inquiries and speculations, which he must pursue by his own reason, and which the splendor of his condition can only hinder : for those who are most exalted above dependence or controul, are yet condemned to pay so large a tribute of their time to ceremony and popularity, that, according to the Greek proverb, "*No man in the house is more a slave than the master of it.*"

avoid the clogs and incumbrances by which the tumults and engagements of society distract and impede the free and full enjoyment of their faculties. The basis, indeed, of every inclination to Solitude is the love of liberty, either mental or corporeal ; a freedom from all constraint and interruption : but the form in which the inclination displays itself, varies according to the character and circumstances of the individual.

Men who are engaged in pursuits foreign to the natural inclination of their minds, sigh continually for Retirement, as the only means of recruiting their fatigued spirits, and procuring a comfortable repose. Scenes of tranquillity can alone afford them any idea of enjoyment. A refined sense of duty, indeed, frequently induces noble minds to sacrifice all personal pleasure to the great interests of the public, or the private benefits of their fellow-creatures ; and they resist every opposing obstacle with courage, and bear every adversity with fortitude, under those cheering sentiments, and proud delights, which result from the pursuits of active charity and benevolence, even though their career be thwarted by those whose advantages they design to promote. The exhilarating idea of being instrumental in affording relief to suffering

C 4

humanity,

humanity, reconciles every difficulty, however great ; prompts to new exertions, however fruitless ; and sustains them in those arduous conflicts, in which all who aspire to promote the interest, and improve the happiness of mankind, must occasionally engage, especially when opposed by the pride and profligacy of the rich and great, and the obstinacy and caprice of the ignorant and unfeeling. But the most virtuous and steady minds cannot always bear up against “ a sea of troubles, or, by opposing, end them ;” and, depressed by temporary adversities, will arraign the cruelty of their condition, and sigh for the shades of peace and tranquillity. How transcendent must be the enjoyment of a great and good Minister, who, after having anxiously attended to the important business of the state, and disengaged himself from the necessary but irksome occupation of official detail, refreshes his mind in the calm of some delightful retreat, with works of taste, and thoughts of fancy and imagination ! A change, indeed, both of scene and sentiment, is absolutely necessary, not only in the serious and important employments, but even in the common occupations and idle amusements of life. Pleasure springs from contrast. The most charming object loses a portion of its power to delight by being continually beheld. Alternate Society and Solitude are necessary to the full enjoyment

joyment both of the pleasures of the world and the delights of Retirement. It is, however, asserted by the celebrated PASCAL, whose life was far from being inactive, that quietude is a beam of the original purity of our nature, and that the height of human happiness is in Solitude and tranquillity. Tranquillity, indeed, is the wish of all: the good, while pursuing the track of virtue; the great, while following the star of glory; and the little, while creeping in the styes of dissipation, sigh for tranquillity, and make it the great object which they ultimately hope to attain. How anxiously does the sailor, on the high and giddy mast, when rolling through tempestuous seas, cast his eyes over the foaming billows, and anticipate the calm security he hopes to enjoy when he reaches the wish'd-for shore! Even kings grow weary of their splendid slavery, and nobles sicken under increasing dignities. All, in short, feel less delight in the actual enjoyment of worldly pursuits, however great and honourable they may be, than in the idea of their being able to relinquish them, and retire to

“ ————— Some calm sequester'd spot ;

“ The world forgetting, by the world forgot.”

The restless and ambitious PYRRHUS* hoped that ease and tranquillity would be the ulti-

C 5

mate

* PYRRHUS, the celebrated sovereign of *Epirus*, was the descendant of PYRRHUS, the son of *Achilles* and *Deidamai*, and king

mate reward of his enterprising conquests. **FREDERICK THE GREAT** discovered, perhaps unintentionally,

king of *Scyros*. While he was yet an infant in his nurse's arms, the chance of war deprived him at once of his father and his throne. *Cassandra*, king of Macedonia, eager to destroy the infant prince, assailed the dwelling in which he was said to have been placed; but his fond and faithful attendants, *Androclides* and *Angelus*, on the first news of his father's fate, had conveyed him to a place of safety in the kingdom of *Illyria*, whose sovereign, *Glaucias*, generously educated him as his own son; and when he had arrived at the age of twelve years, placed him, by the power of his arms, on his native throne. Nurtured amidst the clang of hostile arms, war appeared to be his sole delight; and he indulged his restless, enterprising disposition in successive and obstinate conflicts with the Macedonians, Tarrentines, and other neighbouring powers. On giving battle to the consul *Lævinus*, near *Heraclea*, he gained a complete victory; but the carnage was great, and almost equal numbers killed on each side. "Alas!" exclaimed the conqueror, on viewing his surviving troops, "if I gain such another victory, I shall return I fear almost alone to *Epirus*!" Fond, however, as he appeared of war, he professed to follow it only to procure a solid and permanent peace; and he sent the philosopher *Cineus* for that purpose to *Rome*. The philosopher harangued the senate on the subject of his mission with an extraordinary degree of zeal and eloquence; but the Romans coolly and sagaciously replied, "If **PYRRHUS** really wishes for the friendship of the Roman people, let him first abdicate their dominions, and then the sincerity of his proposals of peace may gain some credit." After a great variety of fortune, he laid siege to *Argos*, and, by the treachery of *Aristius*, entered the city; but having imprudently introduced his elephants, their course was impeded by the narrowness of the streets, and his troops thereby thrown into confusion. The guards who attended him, after having fought
for

intentionally, how pleasing and satisfactory the idea of tranquillity was to his mind, when,
C 6 immediately

for a long time with desperate valour, left their master, and sought safety in flight. PYRRHUS, having thrown away his plumed helmet, to prevent his being known, extricated himself from the hands of his enemies by extraordinary exertions of valour. He had nearly escaped, when a common soldier of Argos darted a javelin furiously at his breast, which the prince dexterously parried with his shield, and had lifted his faulchion to cleave the assailant in two ; but the wife of the soldier, who had observed the conflict from the turret of the adjoining house, perceiving her husband's danger, tumbled a heavy stone upon the head of the king, and levelled him with the ground, while the soldier advancing, cut off his head. Thus died, in the year 272 before Christ, a prince equally celebrated for his virtues and his vices. In the intercourse of life he was mild, and not easily provoked ; but ardent and quick to repay a kindness. Some young officers, during the hours of intoxication, having spoken disrespectfully of him, he sent for them into his presence, and asked them if it was true, that they had used the words imputed to them. " Yes, my lord," replied one of them : " and we should probably have said a great deal more, if we could have got more wine." The king laughed at the liveliness of the observation, and dismissed the offenders. When some of his courtiers advised him to banish a certain ill-tongued ambassador, who abused him behind his back, " Let the fellow stay here," said he, " and speak against me to a few, rather than ramble about, and give me a bad character to all the world." Describing to *Cineus* the conquests he intended to make in Italy, Sicily, Lybia, Carthage, and Greece, " And when we have conquered all these," asked *Cineus*, " what are we to do then ?" " Why then," said PYRRHUS, laughing, " we will take our ease, and drink and be merry." " And why," replied *Cineus*, " can we not repose and be merry without these conquests ?" The invention of the game of CHESS is attributed to this prince.

immediately after he had gained a glorious and important victory, he exclaimed on the field of battle, "*Oh, that my anxieties may now be ended!*" The emperor JOSEPH also displayed the predominancy of this passion for tranquillity and retirement, when, on asking the famous German pedestrian BARON GROTHAUS, what countries he next intended to traverse, was told a long number in rapid succession. "And what then?" continued the Emperor. "Why then," replied the Baron, "I intend to retire to the place of my nativity, and enjoy myself in rural quietude, and the cultivation of my patrimonial farm." "Ah, my good friend," exclaimed the Emperor, "if you will trust the voice of sad experience, you had better neglect the walk, and retire, before it is too late, to the quietude and tranquillity you propose."

PUBLIUS SCIPIO, surnamed AFRICANUS, during the time that he was invested with the highest offices of Rome, and immediately engaged in the most important concerns of the empire, withdrew, whenever an opportunity occurred, from public observation to peaceful privacy; and though not devoted, like TULLY, to the elegant occupations of literature and philosophy, declared that, *He was never less alone than when alone.* He was, says PLUTARCH, incomparably the first,
both

both in virtue and power, of the Romans of his time; but in his highest tide of fortune, he voluntarily abandoned the scene of his glory, and calmly retired to his beautiful villa in the midst of a romantic forest, near *Liturnum*, where he closed, in philosophic tranquillity, the last years of a long and splendid life.*

CICERO,

* *PUBLIUS CORNELIUS SCIPIO* was the son of *P. C. Scipio*, who was consul in the second Punic war, when *Hannibal* crossed the Alps to invade Italy. The battle was fought on the banks of the *Tesin*; and the old consul covered with honourable wounds in the service of his country, was taken prisoner; but his son, who was then only seventeen years of age, and serving his first campaign, delivered his father from captivity, and saved his life. The glorious action established his character, and influenced all the future fortunes of his life. At the battle of *Canna* he saved the republic, by courageously preventing the desertion of a number of officers whose fear had induced them to concert measures for quitting the field. At the age of twenty-seven, he was appointed *Edile* by the voice of the people at large, in opposition to the tribunes, who thought him too young and inexperienced to perform the duties of the office. He was sent into Spain; and in four years he completely defeated the enemy, and made himself master of *CARTHAGENA*. The wife of *Mardonius*, and the children of *Judebelis*, principal personages in the country, were among the prisoners; but the generous conqueror sent them, with every mark of respect, to their afflicted relations. His virtues, indeed, contributed as much to his victories as his courage. Carrying the war into Africa, he beat *Asdrubal*, the most celebrated of the Carthaginian generals; overcame *Syphax*, king of *Numidia*; and at the battle of *Zama*, put the great *Hannibal* to flight, leaving twenty thousand Carthaginians

CICERO, in the plenitude of his power, at a time when his influence over the minds of his fellow-citizens was at its height, retired, with the retiring liberties of his country, to his *Tusculum* villa, to deplore the approaching fate of his beloved city, and to ease, in soothing Solitude, the anguish of his heart.

HORACE, also, the gay and elegant favourite of the great AUGUSTUS, even in the meridian rays of royal favour, renounced the smiles of greatness,

thaginians dead upon the field of battle. This victory, while it produced to *Rome* an advantageous peace, procured for the victor the honour of a triumph, and the appellation of AFRICANUS. A few years afterwards he obtained the consulship a second time; and, passing into *Asia*, defeated *Antiochus*; returned to *ROME*; and, by the enemies his greatness and virtues had created, was impeached of peculation before the people by the tribune *Petellius*, at the instigation of *Cato*: but he defended himself successfully against the charge with that high spirit which marked all his actions. Disgusted with public life, he retired to his villa at *Liturnum*, where, like an ancient Roman, he cultivated his lands in peaceful privacy, and died one hundred and eighty years before the birth of Christ. After his victory over *Syphax*, perceiving *Massinissa* yield with too much indulgence to the passion he had conceived for his captive *Sophonisba*, *SCIPIO* took the king aside, saying, “Believe me, we have much more to fear at our age from the indulgence of excessive passions, than from the sword of armed enemies. He who by his wisdom has happily learned to curb his inclinations, has acquired more honour, and accomplished a much more important and glorious victory, than that which we have gained over *Syphax*.”

greatness, and all the seductive blandishments of an imperial court, to enjoy his happy muse among the romantic wilds of his sequestered villa of *Tibur*, near the lake *Albunea*.

But there are few characters who have passed the concluding scenes of life with more real dignity than the Emperor **DIOCLESIAN**. In the twenty-first year of his reign, though he had never practised the lessons of philosophy either in the attainment or the use of supreme power, and although his reign had flowed with a tide of uninterrupted success, he executed his memorable resolution of abdicating the empire, and gave the world the first example of a resignation which has not been very frequently imitated by succeeding monarchs. **DIOCLESIAN** was at this period only fifty-nine years of age, and in the full possession of his mental faculties; but he had vanquished all his enemies, and executed all his designs; and his active life, his wars, his journies, the cares of royalty, and his application to business, having impaired his constitution, and brought on the infirmities of a premature old age, he resolved to pass the remainder of his days in honourable repose; to place his glory beyond the reach of fortune; and to relinquish the theatre of the world to his younger and more active associates. The ceremony of his abdication was performed in a spacious plain, about three miles from *Nicomedia*.

The emperor ascended a lofty throne, and, in a speech full of reason and dignity, declared his intention both to the people, and to the soldiers, who were assembled on this extraordinary occasion. As soon as he had divested himself of the purple, he withdrew from the gazing multitude; and traversing the city in a covered chariot, proceeded, without delay, to the favourite retirement which he had chosen in his native country of *Dalmatia*. The emperor, who, from a servile origin, had raised himself to the throne, passed the last nine years of his life in a private condition at *Salona*. Reason had dictated, and content seems to have accompanied, his retreat, in which he enjoyed for a long time the respect of those princes to whom he had resigned the possession of the world. It is seldom that minds long exercised in business have formed any habits of conversing with themselves; and in the loss of power, they principally regret the want of occupation. The amusements of letters and of devotion, which afford so many resources in Solitude, were incapable of fixing the attention of *Dioclesian*: but he had preserved, or, at least, he soon recovered, a taste for the most innocent as well as natural pleasures; and his leisure hours were sufficiently employed in building, planting, and gardening. His answer to *Maximian* is deservedly celebrated. He was solicited by that
restless

restless old man to reassume the reins of government and the imperial purple. He rejected the temptation with a smile of pity, calmly observing, that if he could shew MAXIMIAN the cabbages he had planted at *Salona*, he should no longer be urged to relinquish the enjoyment of happiness for the pursuit of power. In his conversations with his friends, he frequently acknowledged, that of all arts the most difficult was that of reigning; and he expressed himself on that favourite topic with a degree of warmth which could be the result only of experience. “How often,” was he accustomed to say, “is it the interest of four or five ministers to combine together to deceive their sovereign! Secluded from mankind by his exalted dignity, the truth is concealed from his knowledge: he can only see with their eyes; he hears nothing but their misrepresentations. He confers the most important offices upon vice and weakness, and disgraces the most virtuous and deserving among his subjects: and by such infamous acts the best and wisest princes are sold to the venal corruption of their courtiers.” A just estimate of greatness, and the assurance of immortal fame, improve our relish for the pleasures of Retirement.

ZENOBI^A, the celebrated queen of *Palmyra* and *the East*, a female whose superior genius broke

broke through the fervile indolence imposed on her sex by the climate and manners of *Asia*, the most lovely as well as the most heroic of her sex, who spread the terror of her arms over *Arabia*, *Armenia*, and *Persia*, and kept even the legions of the Roman empire in awe, was, after the two great battles of *Antioch* and *Emesa*, at length subdued, and made the illustrious captive of the emperor AURELIAN; but the conqueror respecting the sex, the beauty, the courage, and endowments of the Syrian Queen, not only preserved her life, but presented her with an elegant villa at *Tibur* or *Tivoli*, about twenty miles from *Rome*; where, in happy tranquillity, she fed the greatness of her soul with the noble images of HOMER, and the exalted precepts of PLATO; supported the adversity of her fortunes with fortitude and resignation; and learnt that the anxieties attendant on ambition are happily exchanged for the enjoyments of ease, and the comforts of philosophy.*

CHARLES

* ZENOBI A claimed her descent from the Macedonian kings of *Egypt*, equalled in beauty her ancestor CLEOPATRA, and far surpassed that princess in chastity and valour. This accomplished woman gave her hand to ODENATHUS, who, from a private station, raised himself to the dominion of the East. She soon became the friend and companion of a hero; and his success in obtaining splendid victories over the great king whom they twice pursued as far as the gates of *Ctesiphon*, was in a great measure

CHARLES THE FIFTH resigned the government of the empire to his brother the king of the

measure ascribed to her incomparable prudence and fortitude. ODENATHUS was treacherously murdered by MÆONIUS, his nephew; but the traitor was justly sacrificed by ZENOBIÀ to the memory of her husband. She filled the vacant throne, and, instead of the little passions which so frequently perplex a female reign, administered the affairs of state by the most judicious maxims of policy: but it must be observed, that she enjoyed the extraordinary advantage of having the great LONGINUS for her counsellor and friend. The emperor AURELIAN, in an original letter written by him to the Roman senate during the siege of *Palmyra*, pays the highest compliment to her abilities, and describes the many difficulties he had to encounter; but his fortune and perseverance surmounted every obstacle; and ZENOBIÀ, disappointed of receiving the expected succours from her allies, was obliged to fly on one of the fleetest of her dromedaries from her tottering metropolis. She had already reached the banks of the *Euphrates*, when she was overtaken by the pursuit of AURELIAN'S light horse, seized, and brought back a captive to the feet of the conqueror. When the Syrian Queen was brought into his presence, he sternly asked her why she had presumed to rise in arms against the Emperor of *Rome*. "Because," replied the captive Queen, "I disdained to consider as Roman Emperors, an AUREOLUS or a GALLIENUS: you alone I acknowledge as my conqueror and sovereign." Her courage, however, deserted her in the hour of trial; and throwing the guilt of her obstinate resistance on her advisers, ignominiously purchased life by the sacrifice of her fame and friends. But Mr. GIBBON feelingly observes, the fame of LONGINUS, who was included among the numerous, and, perhaps, innocent victims of her fear, will survive that of the queen, who betrayed, or the tyrant who condemned, him. Genius and learning were incapable

the Romans ; and transferred all claims of obedience and allegiance to him from the Germanic body, in order that he might no longer be detained from that retreat for which he long had languished. In passing, some years before, from *Valladolid* to *Placentia*, in the province of *Estramadura*, he was struck with the delightful situation of the monastery of ST. JUSTUS, belonging to the order of ST. JEROME, not many miles distant from the town ; and observed to some of his attendants, that this was a spot to which DIOCLESIAN might have retired with pleasure. The impression remained upon his mind, and he determined to make it the place of his own retreat. It was seated in a vale of no great extent, watered by a small brook, and surrounded by rising grounds covered with lofty trees ; and from the nature of the soil, as well as the temperature of the climate, was esteemed the most healthful and delicious situation in SPAIN. Some months before his resignation, he had sent an architect thither to add a new apartment to the monastery for his accommodation ; but he gave strict orders that the style of the building should be

pable of moving a fierce, unlettered soldier ; but they had served to elate and harmonize the soul of LONGINUS. Without uttering a complaint, he calmly followed the executioner, pitying his unhappy mistress, and bestowing comfort on his afflicted friends.

be such as suited his present station rather than his former dignity. It consisted only of six rooms ; four of them in the form of friars' cells, with naked walls ; the other two, each twenty feet square, were hung with brown cloth, and furnished in the most simple manner : they were all on a level with the ground, with a door on one side into a garden, of which CHARLES himself had given the plan, and had filled it with various plants, which he intended to cultivate with his own hands. On the other side they communicated with the chapel of the monastery in which he was to perform his devotions. In this humble retreat, hardly sufficient for the comfortable accommodation of a private gentleman, did CHARLES enter with twelve domestics only, and buried in Solitude and silence, his grandeur, his ambition, and all those vast prospects which, during almost half a century, had alarmed and agitated EUROPE ; filling every kingdom in it, by turns, with the terror of his arms, and the dread of being subdued by his power.

These instances of resignation and retirement, to which many others might have been added, sufficiently prove that a desire to live in free leisure, independent of the restraints of society, is one of the most powerful affections of the human mind ; and that Solitude, judiciously and rationally

ally employed, amply compensates all that is sacrificed for the purposes of enjoying it.

But there are many other sources from whence an anti-social disposition may arise, which merit consideration. That terrible malady the *hypochondria*, frequently renders the unhappy sufferer not only averse to Society in general, but even fearful of meeting a human being ; and the still more dreadful malady, *a wounded heart*, increases our antipathy to mankind. The fear of unfounded calumny also sometimes drives weak and dejected minds into the imaginary shelter of obscurity ; and even strong and honest characters, prone to disclose their real sentiments, are disgusted at the world, from a consciousness of its being unable to listen temperately to the voice of truth. The obstinacy with which mankind persist in habitual errors, and the violence with which they indulge inveterate passions, a deep regret for their follies, and the horror which their vices create, drive us frequently from their presence. The love of science, a fondness for the arts, and an attachment to the immortal works of genius, induce, I trust, not a few to neglect all anxiety to learn the common news of the day, and keep them in some calm, sequestered retreat, far from the unmeaning manners of the noisy world, improving the genuine feelings of their hearts, and storing their
minds

minds with the principles of true philosophy. There are others, (though, I fear, they are few,) who, impressed by a strong sense of the duties of RELIGION, and feeling how incompatible with their practice are most, if not all, the factitious joys of social life, retire from the corrupted scene, to contemplate, in sacred privacy, the attributes of a Being unalterably pure, and infinitely good ; to impress upon their minds so strong a sense of the importance of obedience to the divine will, of the value of the reward promised to virtue, and the terrors of the punishment denounced against crimes, as may overbear all temptations which temporal hope or fear can bring in their way, and enable them to bid equal defiance to joy and sorrow ; to turn away at one time from the allurements of ambition, and press forward at another against the threats of calamity.*

The

* “ The conduct of those,” says MONTAIGNE, in his excellent Essay on Solitude, “ who retire from the world with devout views, and to encourage the delightful hope resulting from the divine promise of immortality hereafter, is founded in the highest exertion of reason. GOD, a being of infinite wisdom, goodness, and power, becomes the sole and sacred object of their contemplation. The pious dispositions of the soul expand, and find a happy leisure and indulgence. Employed in the pursuit of joys everlasting, the pains and afflictions of mortality lose their severity and sting. The austerity which they
ever

The dejection occasioned by the *hypochondria*, renders the mind not only averse from, but wholly incapable of, any pleasure, and induces the unhappy sufferer to seek a solitude by which it is increased. The influence of this dreadful malady is so powerful, that it destroys all hope of remedy, and prevents those exertions by which alone we are told it can be cured.

To cure the mind's wrong bias—SPLEEN,
Some recommend the bowling-green ;
Some hilly walks ; all, exercise ;
Fling but a stone, the Giant dies :
Laugh, and be well. Monkeys have been
Extreme good doctors for the Spleen ;
And kittens, if the humour hit,
Have harlequin'd away the fit.

But,

ever think it necessary to observe, is softened by custom ; and all the dangerous passions and unruly appetites of the soul, are moderated, restrained, and at length subdued ; for the unworthy appetites and passions of our natures are the creatures of habit, and are only supported by exercise and use. The tyrant Death is, under such circumstances, disarmed of all his terrors, and they consider his arrival as a happy event ; an event which removes them from a vale of tears into the blissful regions of eternal joy. To attain this end, they abandon, without regret, the pleasures and conveniences of this world : and they who happily inflame their souls with the ardour of this lively faith, and satisfactory hope, certainly create in SOLITUDE a more voluptuous and delicious life than any which this world can otherwise afford.

Tacitum sylvas inter reptare salubres
Curantem quicquid dignum sapiente bono que est.

But, alas ! the heart shuts itself against every pleasing sensation, and the mind dismisses every cheering sentiment. Joy opens in vain its festal arms to receive him ; and he shuns embraces whose light and mirthful air, would only serve to increase the melancholy of his dreary and dis-tempered mind. Even the tender, affectionate offices of friendship, in endeavouring to sooth and divert his mind, by lively conversation and social intercourses, appear officious and ill-timed. His spirits are quite dejected ; his faculties become torpid ; and his sense of enjoyment is annihilated. The charming air, which breathes to others the sweetest fragrance, and most invigorating delights, feels to him like a pestilent congregation of vapours.

His pensive spirit takes the lonely grove :
Nightly he visits all the sylvan scenes,
Where far remote a melancholy moon
Raising her head, serene and shorn of beams,
Throws here and there the glimmerings thro' the
trees,
To make more awful darkness.

Conscious that his frame is totally unstrung, and that his pulse is incapable of beating in any pleasant unison with the feelings of his healthful friends, he withers into sorrowful decay. Every object around him appears to be at enmity with his
VOL. II. D feelings,

feelings, and comes shapeless and discoloured to his disordered eyes. The gentle voice of pity grates his ears with harsh and hollow sounds, and seems to reproach him with insulting tones. Stricken by this dreadful malady, the lamentable effects of which a cruel and unfeeling world too often ridicule and despise, and constantly tearing open the wound it has occasioned, the afflicted spirit flies from every scene of social joy and animating pleasure, seeks, as a sole resource, to hide its sorrows in solitary seclusion, and awaits, in lingering sufferance, the stroke of death.

So the struck deer, with some deep wound oppress'd,
Lies down to die, the arrow in his breast;
There hid in shades, and wasting day by day,
Inly he bleeds, and pants his life away.*

The

* COWLEY, the celebrated English poet, seems to have laboured under this melancholy disorder, when he tells us that he had a vehement intention to retire to one of the American plantations; not to seek for gold, or to enrich himself by traffic, but to *forfake this world for ever*, with all the vanities and vexations of it; and to bury himself there in some obscure retreat, with no other consolation than that of letters and philosophy. "If," says Dr. JOHNSON, "he had proceeded in his project, and fixed his habitation in the most delightful part of the New World, it may be doubted whether his distance from the *vanities* of life would have enabled him to keep away the *vexations*. It is

The erroneous opinions, perverse dispositions, and inveterate prejudices of the world, are sometimes the causes which induce men to retire from Society, and seek in Solitude the enjoyments of innocence and truth. Careless of a commerce with those for whom they can entertain no esteem, their minds naturally incline towards those scenes in which their fancy paints the fairest forms of felicity. He, indeed, whose free and independent spirit is resolved to permit his mind to think for itself, who disdains to form his feelings, and to fashion his opinions, upon the capricious notions of the world; who is too candid to expect that others should be guided by his notions, and sufficiently firm not to obey implicitly the hasty notions of others; who seeks to culti-

D 2

vate

is common for a man who feels pain, to fancy he could bear it better in any other part. COWLEY, having known the troubles and perplexities of a particular condition, readily persuaded himself, that nothing worse was to be found, and that every alteration would bring some improvement; he never suspected that the causes of his unhappiness were within; that his own passions were not sufficiently regulated; and that he was harrassed by his own impatience, which could never be without something to awaken it, but would accompany him over the sea, and find its way to the American elysium. He would, upon the trial, have been soon convinced, that the fountain of CONTENT must spring up in the mind; and that he who has so little knowledge of human nature, as to seek happiness by changing any thing but his own disposition, will waste his life in fruitless efforts, and multiply the griefs which he purposes to remove."

vate the just and manly feelings of the heart, and to pursue TRUTH in the paths of science, must detach himself from the degenerate crowd, and seek his enjoyments in Retirement.* For to those who love to consult their own ideas, to form opinions upon their own reasonings and discernment, and to express only such sentiments as they really feel, a society whose judgments are borrowed, whose literature is only specious, and whose principles are unfounded, must not only be irksomely insipid, but morally dangerous. The firm and noble-minded disdain to bow their necks to the slavish yoke of vulgar prejudice, and appeal, in support of their opinions, to the higher tribunals of sense and reason, from the partial and ill-formed sentences of conceited critics, who, destitute themselves of any sterling merit, endeavour to depreciate the value of that coin whose weight and purity render it current, and to substitute their own base and varnished compositions

* It is said by a celebrated French writer of the old school, "That there is a necessity for men either to imitate others or to hate them; but that both of them ought to be avoided by OCCASIONAL RETIREMENT: that a wise man, although he is enabled to live every where with content, and to be retired even amidst the crowd of a palace, will, if left to his own choice, fly from the very sight of the court, and seek a happy SOLITUDE; for that, however able he may be to endure, if need be, the corruptions of the world, he will not think himself sufficiently rid of vice, while he has to contend with it in other men."

positions in its stead. Those self-created wits, who proudly place themselves in the professor's chair, look with an envious and malignant eye on all the works of genius, taste, and sense ; and as their interests are intimately blended with the destruction of every sublime and elegant production, their cries are raised against them the moment they appear. To blast the fame of merit is their chief object, and their highest joy ; and their lives are industriously employed to stifle the discoveries, to impede the advancement, to condemn the excellency, and to pervert the meaning, of their more ingenious contemporaries. Like loathsome toads, they grovel on the ground, and, as they move along, emit a nasty slime, or frothy venom, on the sweetest shrubs and fairest flowers of the fields.

From the society of such characters, who seem to consider the noble productions of superior intellect, the fine and vigorous flights of fancy, the brilliant effusions of a sublime imagination, and the refined feelings of the heart, as fancied conceits or wild deliriums, those who examine them by a better standard than that of fashion or common taste, fly with delight.

The reign of envy, however, although it is perpetual as to the existence of the passion, is

only transitory as to the objects of its tyranny ; and the merit which has fallen the victim of its rage, is frequently raised by the hand of Truth, and placed on the throne of public applause. A production of genius, however the ears of its author were deafened, during his life, by the clamours of calumny, and hisses of ignorance, is reviewed with impartiality when he dies, and revived by the acclamations of ingenuous applause. The reproach which the life of a great and good man is continually casting on his mean and degenerate contemporaries, is silenced by his death. He is remembered only in the character of his works ; and his fame increases with the successive generations, which his sentiments and opinions contribute to enlighten and adorn.

Envy will merit as its shade pursue ;
 And, like a shadow, prove the substance true :
 For envy'd wit, like Sol eclips'd, makes known
 The opposing body's greatness, not its own.
 When first that sun too powerful beams displays,
 It draws up vapours which obscure its rays ;
 But e'en those clouds at last adorn its way,
 Reflect new glories, and augment the day.

The history of the celebrated English philosopher DAVID HUME,* affords, perhaps, a
 stronger

* Hume was born on the 26th of April, 1711, at *Edinburgh* ; of a good family, both by father and mother. His
 father's

stronger instance of the dangers to which wit and learning are exposed from the malicious shafts of envy, ignorance, and intolerance, than that of any other author. The tax, indeed, is common to authors of every description, but it frequently falls the heaviest on the highest heads. This profound philosopher, and elegant historian, possessed a mild temper; a lively, social disposition; a high sense of friendship, and an incorruptible integrity. His manners, indeed, appeared, at first sight, cold and repulsive: for

D 4

he

father's family were a branch of the *Earl of Home's*, or *Hume's*; and his elder brother was in possession of the family estate. His mother was the daughter of *Sir David Falconer*, President of the College of Justice, whose son succeeded to the title of *Lord Halkertin*. His family, however, was not rich; and he being a younger brother, his patrimony, according to the mode of his country, was of course very slender. His father, who passed for a man of parts, died when he was an infant, leaving him, with an elder brother and a sister, under the care of their mother, a woman of singular merit, who, though young and handsome, devoted herself entirely to the rearing and educating of her children. "I passed," says HUME, in the account he has given of his own life, "through the ordinary course of education with success, and was seized very early with a passion for literature, which has been the ruling passion of my life, and the great source of my enjoyments. My studious disposition, my sobriety, and my industry, gave my family a notion that THE LAW were a proper profession for me; but I found an insurmountable aversion to every thing but the pursuits of philosophy and general learning; and while they fancied I was poring over *Voet* and *Vinnius*, *CICERO* and *VIRGIL* were the authors which I was secretly devouring."

he had sacrificed little to the Graces ; but his mind was unvaryingly cheerful, and his affection uncommonly warm and generous ; and neither his ardent desire of fame, nor the gross and unfounded calumnies of his enemies, were capable of disturbing the happy tranquillity of his heart. His life was passed in the constant exercise of humanity and benevolence ; and even those who had been seduced, by the jealous and vindictive artifices of others, wantonly to attack his fame and character with obloquy and reproach, experienced his kindness, and acknowledged his virtues. He would never, indeed, confess that his friends had ever had occasion to vindicate any one circumstance of his character or conduct, or that he had ever been attacked either by the baleful tooth of envy, or the rage of civil or religious faction. His company, indeed, was equally agreeable to all the classes of society ; and young and old, rich and poor, listened with pleasure to his conversation, and quitted his company with regret ; for, although he was deeply learned, and his discourses replete with sagacity and science, he had the happy art of delivering his sentiments upon all subjects without the appearance of ostentation, or in any way offending the feelings of his hearers.

The interests of Religion are said to have suffered by the abuse of his talents ; but the precepts

cepts of Christianity were never more powerfully recommended, than by the integrity of his morals, and the purity of his life. His benign and gentle spirit, attached to VIRTUE, and averse from every species of VICE, essentially promoted the practice of piety, and the duties of a religious mind; and did not, as is always the case with the zeal of persecution and martyrdom, tear away the very foundation of that fabric which it pretends to support. The excellency, indeed, both of the head and the heart of this great and good man, enabled him not only to enjoy himself with perfect felicity, but to contribute to the improvement and increase the happiness of mankind. This is the opinion now generally entertained of the character of HUME; but far different were the sentiments of his contemporaries upon this subject. It was not either in a barbarous country, or in an unenlightened age, that he lived; but, although the land was free, the people philosophical, and the spirit of the times provoked the minds of learned men to metaphysical enquiry, the fame of HUME was wrecked upon his moral and religious writings. He was charged with being a SCEPTIC;* but from the propa-

D 5

gation

* The animosity which prevailed against this elegant writer scarcely outlived him. He died in the year 1776; and at that period, we find the following conversation recorded relative

gation of certain doctrines, and the freedom of enquiry which had then gone forth, it is impossible to attribute his disappointments to this cause.

A kind

to this subject. Dr. ADAMS, who had distinguished himself by an able answer to HUME's "*Essay on Miracles*," told Mr. BOSWELL, that he had once dined in company with HUME in London; that HUME shook hands with him, and said, "You have treated me much better than I deserve;" and that they exchanged visits: that Mr. BOSWELL thereupon objected to treating an infidel with such smooth civility, observing, that where there is a controversy concerning a passage in a classic author, or concerning a question in antiquities, or any other subject in which human happiness is not deeply interested, a man may treat his antagonist with politeness and respect; but where the controversy is concerning the truth of RELIGION, it is of such vast importance to him who maintains it to obtain the victory, that the *person* of an opponent ought not to be spared. If a man firmly believes that Religion is an invaluable treasure, he will consider a writer who endeavours to deprive mankind of it as a *robber*; he will look upon him as *odious*, though the *infidel* might think himself in the right. A robber who reasons as the *gang* do in the Beggars' Opera, who call themselves practical philosophers, and may have as much sincerity as pernicious speculative philosophers, is not the less an object of just indignation." Mr. PALEY, who, in his *View of the Evidences of Christianity*, has attacked, and completely exposed the *false principles* by which the mind of HUME was misled upon this important subject, treats his antagonist with candour and liberality, while he subdues him with the superior powers of truth, and thereby more effectually defeats the ill effects which may flow from such unfounded doctrines, than if he had, in the language of the biographer above alluded to, talked of "kicking him down stairs," or "running him through the body."

A kind of natural prejudice, indeed, prevailed in *England* at this period against the *Scots* ; but as he did not experience much favour from his own countrymen, no conclusion can be fairly drawn from this circumstance ; and the extraordinary *History of his Literary Transactions*, a work written by himself, cannot be perused without an equal degree of surprize and concern. The contemptuous repulses which his several compositions received from the public appear incredible ; but the facts he relates are undoubtedly authentic ; and while they raise a sorrowful regret for the fate of HUME in particular, they must unhappily tend to diminish the ardour of the student who contemplates the various dangers to which his desire of fame is exposed, and may, perhaps, induce him to quit the pursuit of and object “ So hard to gain, so easy to be lost.”

Alas ! who can tell how hard it is to climb
 The steep where FAME's proud temple shines afar ?
 Ah ! who can tell how many a soul sublime
 Has felt the influence of malignant star,
 And wag'd with Fortune an eternal war ?
 Check'd by the scoff of Pride, by Envy's frown,
 And Poverty's unconquerable bar,
 In life's low vale remote has pin'd alone,
 Then dropt into the grave, unpitied and unknown !

The health of this disappointed author being in a great degree broken by his too ardent pursuit

of literature, he went, on the close of the year 1734, to FRANCE, with a view to prosecute his studies in a country retreat, and to be the better enabled to observe that rigid frugality which the deficiency of his fortune, and his love of independence, required. During this retreat, which was first at *Rheims*, but chiefly at *La Fleche*, in *Anjou*, he composed his *Treatise on Human Nature*; and, after an absence of three years in this agreeable solitude, returned to *London*, for the purpose of publishing the work; but, to use his own expression, “Never literary attempt
“ was more unfortunate than the publication of
“ this treatise. It fell *dead-born from the press*,
“ without reaching such distinction as even to
“ excite a murmur among the zealots: but being
“ naturally of a cheerful and sanguine temper,
“ I very soon recovered the blow.” He entertained a notion that his want of success in publishing this work, had proceeded more from the *manner* than the *matter*, and that he had been guilty of the usual indiscretion of young authors, in going to the press too early. He therefore cast the first part of that work anew, and introduced it into his *Enquiry concerning the Understanding*, which was published about ten years afterwards, while he was at *Turin*; but this piece was at first little more successful than the *Treatise on Human Nature*; and, on his return to *England*,
he

he had the mortification to find the whole country in a ferment on account of Dr. MIDDLETON's *Free Enquiry*, while his performance was entirely overlooked and neglected. A new edition of his *Essays Moral and Political* met with little better reception. In the year 1749 he retired from *London* to the house of his brother in the country, where, during a residence of two years, he composed the second part of an Essay which he called *Political Discourses*, and also his *Enquiry concerning the Principles of Morals*, which was the other part of his *Treatise on Human Nature* cast anew; and he flattered himself, from the accounts he received from his bookfeller, and from the railings of Dr. WARBURTON, that his works were beginning to be esteemed in good company. Encouraged by these symptoms of a rising reputation, he published in the year 1752, at *Edinburgh*, where he then lived, his *Political Discourses*, which met with some success; but, on publishing, in the same year, at *London*, his *Enquiry concerning the Principles of Morals*, which, in his own opinion, was, of all his writings, historical, philosophical, or literary, incomparably the best, it came, to use his own words, "unnoticed and unobserved into the world." In the year 1752 the Faculty of Advocates chose him their librarian; an office from which he received little or no emolument,

emolument, but which gave him the command of a large library. He formed about this period the plan of writing *THE HISTORY OF ENGLAND*; but being frightened with the notion of continuing a narrative through a period of seventeen hundred years, he commenced with the accession of the *House of Stuart*; an epoch when he thought the misrepresentation of faction began chiefly to take place; and he acknowledges that he was extremely sanguine in his expectations of the success of this work. “I thought,” says he, “that I was the only historian that had
“at once neglected present power, interest, and
“authority, and the cry of popular prejudices;
“and as the subject was suited to every capacity,
“I expected proportional applause; but miserable was my disappointment: I was assailed by
“one cry of reproach, disapprobation, and even
“detestation. English, Scotch, and Irish, Whig
“and Tory, churchman and sectary, freethinker
“and religionist, patriot and courtier, united
“in their rage against the man who had presumed to shed a generous tear for the fate
“of *CHARLES THE FIRST*, and the *EARL OF STRAFFORD*; and after the first ebullitions of their fury were over, what was still
“more mortifying, the book seemed to sink into
“oblivion. Mr. MILLAR told me, that in a
“twelvemonth he sold only forty-five copies of
“it.

“ it. I scarcely, indeed, heard of one man in
“ the three kingdoms, considerable for rank or
“ letters, that could endure the book. I must
“ only except the primate of *England*, Dr. HER-
“ RING, and the primate of *Ireland*, Dr. STONE,
“ which seem two odd exceptions. These digni-
“ fied prelates separately sent me messages not to
“ be discouraged. I was, however, I confess,
“ discouraged ; and had not the war at that time
“ been breaking out between *France* and *Eng-*
“ *land*, I had certainly retired to some provincial
“ town of the former kingdom, have changed
“ my name, and never more have returned to
“ my native country. But as this scheme was
“ not now practicable, and the subsequent vo-
“ lume was considerably advanced, I resolved to
“ pick up courage, and to persevere.” During
this interval he published at *London* his *Natu-*
ral History of Religion, along with some other
small pieces ; but its public entry was rather
obscure, except only that Dr. HURD wrote a
pamphlet against it, with all the illiberal petu-
lance, arrogance, and scurrility of the *Warbur-*
tonian school. In 1756, two years after *the fall*
of the first volume, was published the second
volume of his *History*, containing the period
from the death of CHARLES THE FIRST till
THE REVOLUTION. This performance happen-
ed to give less displeasure to the *Whigs*, and was
better

better received. It not only rose itself, but helped to buoy up its unfortunate brother. “ But “ though,” adds Mr. HUME, “ I had been “ taught by experience, that the Whig party were “ in possession of bestowing all places, both in “ the state and in literature, I even so little “ inclined to yield to their *senseless clamours*, that “ in above a hundred alterations, which farther “ study, reading, or recollection, engaged me “ to make in the reigns of the two first Stuarts, “ I made all of them invariably to *the Tory* “ side.” In the year 1759 he published his *History of the House of Tudor*; but the clamour against this performance was almost equal to that against the History of the two first STUARTS. The reign of ELIZABETH was particularly obnoxious. But he was now callous against the impression of *public folly*, and continued very peaceably and contentedly in his retreat at *Edinburgh*, to finish, in two volumes, the more early part of the English History, which he gave to the public in 1761, with tolerable, and with but tolerable, success.*

This

* The writings of HUME, however, notwithstanding the variety of winds and seasons to which they were exposed, made such advances, that the copy-money given him by the booksellers much exceeded any thing before known in *England*, and rendered him not only independent, but opulent. “ I retired,” says he, “ in the little memoir from which the greatest part of the
above

This is the melancholy history of the literary career of the celebrated HUME, as appears from the

above account is taken, “ to my native country of *Scotland*,
 “ determined never more to set my foot out of it ; and retain-
 “ ing the satisfaction of never having preferred a request to one
 “ GREAT MAN, or ever making advances of friendship to any
 “ of them.” He was now more than fifty years of age, and
 thought of passing all the rest of his life in this philosophical
 manner, when, in the year 1763, he received an invitation from
 the *Earl of Hertford*, with whom he was not in the least ac-
 quainted, to attend him on his embassy to *PARIS*, with a near
 prospect of being appointed secretary to the embassy, and in the
 mean while of performing the functions of that office. After
 some hesitation, and repeated solicitation from the Earl, he ac-
 cepted the offer, and the appointment of secretary. He conti-
 nued at *PARIS* until the beginning of the year 1766, and seems
 to have been by no means displeased with his reception there.
 “ Those,” says he, “ who have not seen the strange effects of
 “ modes, will never imagine the reception I met with at *PA-*
 “ *RIS*, from men and women of all ranks and stations: the
 “ more I refused from their excessive civilities, the more I was
 “ loaded with them. There is, however, a real satisfaction in
 “ living at *PARIS*, from the great number of sensible, know-
 “ ing and polite persons with which that city abounds above
 “ all places in the universe.” In 1767 he accepted the office of
 under secretary to Mr. CONWAY ; and returned to *Edinburgh*, in
 1769, possessed of a revenue of £.1000 a year, good health,
 high spirits, and the prospect of enjoying ease as his reputation
 increased ; but in the spring of the year 1775 he was attacked
 with a disorder in his bowels which was incurable ; and he ex-
 pired on Sunday, the 25th of August, 1776. His character is thus
 drawn by his friend Dr. ADAM SMITH. “ Thus died our most
 excellent and never-to-be-forgotten friend, concerning whose
 philosophical

the short sketch he made of *his own life*, while he calmly waited under an incurable disorder the moment of approaching dissolution; a work which proclaims the mildness, the modesty, and the

philosophical writings men will no doubt judge variously, every one approving or condemning them according as they happen to coincide or disagree with his own; but concerning whose character and conduct there can scarce be a difference of opinion. His temper, indeed, seemed to be more happily balanced, if I may be allowed such an expression, than that, perhaps, of any other man I have ever known. Even in the lowest state of his fortune, his great and necessary frugality never hindered him from exercising, upon proper occasions, acts both of charity and generosity. It was not a frugality founded upon avarice, but upon the love of independency. The extreme gentleness of his nature never weakened either the firmness of his mind, or the steadiness of his resolutions. His constant pleasantry, ever the genuine effusion of good-nature and good-humour, tempered with delicacy and modesty, was without even the slightest tincture of malignity, so frequently the disagreeable source of what is called wit in other men. It never was the meaning of his raillery to mortify; and therefore, far from offending, it seldom failed to please and delight those who were the objects of it. To his friends, who were frequently the objects of it, there was not, perhaps, any one of all his great and amiable qualities which contributed more to endear his conversation: and that gaiety of temper so agreeable in society, but which is so often accompanied with frivolous and superficial qualities, was in him certainly attended with the most severe application, the most extensive learning, the greatest depth of thought, and a capacity in every respect the most comprehensive. Upon the whole, I have always considered him, both in his life-time, and since his death, as approaching as nearly to the idea of a perfectly wise and virtuous man, as perhaps the nature of human frailty will permit."

the resignation of his temper, as clearly as his other works demonstrate the power and extent of his mind. The history, indeed, of every man who attempts to destroy the reigning prejudices, or correct the prevailing errors, of his age and country, is nearly the same. He who has the happiness to see objects of any description with greater perspicacity than his contemporaries, and presumes to disseminate his superior knowledge by the unreserved publication of his opinions, sets himself up as a common mark for the shafts of envy and resentment to pierce, and seldom escapes from being charged with wicked designs against the interests of mankind. A writer, whatever his character, station or talents may be, will find that he has a host of malevolent inferiors ready to seize every opportunity of gratifying their humbled pride, by attempting to level his superior merits, and subdue his rising fame. Even the compassionate few, who are ever ready to furnish food to the hungry, cloathing to the naked, and consolation to the afflicted, seldom feel any other sensation than that of jealousy, on beholding the wreath of merit placed on the brows of a deserving rival. The EPHESIANS, with republican pride, being unable to endure the reproach which they felt from the pre-eminency of any individual, banished to some other state the citizen who presumed to excel the generality of his

his countrymen. It would be in some measure adopting this egregious and tyrannical folly, were I to exhort the man whose merits transcend those who are his equals in rank or station, to break off all intercourse and connection with them; but I am certain that he might, by an occasional retirement, elude the effects of their envy, and avoid those provocations, to which, by his superiority, he will otherwise be continually exposed.

To treat the frailties of our fellow-creatures with tenderness, to correct their errors with kindness, to view even their vices with pity, and to induce, by every friendly attention, a mutual complacency and good will, is not only an important moral duty, but a means of increasing the sum of earthly happiness. It is, indeed, difficult to prevent an honest mind from bursting forth with generous indignation against those artful hypocrites, who, by specious and plausible practices, obtain the false character of being wise and good, and obtrude their flimsy and heterodox opinions upon the unthinking world, as the fair and genuine sentiments of TRUTH and VIRTUE. The anger which arises in a generous and ardent mind, on hearing a noble action calumniated, or a useful work illiberally attacked, is not easily restrained; but such feelings should be checked
and

and regulated with a greater degree of caution, than even if they were less virtuous and praiseworthy; for if they are indulged with frequency, their natural violence may weaken the common charities of the mind, and convert its very goodness and love of virtue into a mournful misanthropy, or virulent detestation of mankind.

The precepts here of a divine old man
I could recite. Tho' old, he still retain'd
His manly sense, and energy of mind.
Virtuous and wise he was, but not *severe*;
He still remember'd that he once was young;
His easy presence check'd no decent joy.
Him ev'n the *dissolute* admir'd; for he
A graceful looseness, when he pleas'd, put on;
And laughing, could instruct. Much had he read,
Much more had seen: he studied from the life,
And in th' original perus'd mankind.
Vers'd in the woes and vanities of life,
He pitied MAN. Of right and wrong he taught
Truths as refin'd as ever ATHENS heard;
And, strange to tell! he practis'd what he preach'd.
Skill'd in THE PASSIONS, how to check their sway
He knew, as far as REASON can controul
The lawless powers.

Let not the MAN whose exalted mind, improved by study and observation, surveys with a discriminating eye, the moral depravities and mental weaknesses of human nature, submit to treat his envious inferiors with inveterate anger, and undistinguishing revenge. Their
2 envy

envy is a tribute of approbation to his greatness. Let him look with the gentle eye of pity upon those who err rather from the wicked suggestions of others, than from the malevolence of their own hearts : let him not confound the weak and innocent reptile with the scorpion and the viper ; let him listen without emotion to the malignant barkings, and envious hissings, that every where attend the footsteps of transcendant merit : let him disregard with philosophic dignity, the senseless clamours of those noisy adversaries who are blinded by prejudice, and deaf to the arguments of sense and reason : let him rather, by a mild and forbearing temper, endeavour to make some impression on their hearts ; and if he should find their bosoms susceptible, he may hope in time to convince them of their errors, and, without violence or compulsion, bring back their deluded understandings to a sense of TRUTH, and the practice of VIRTUE : but if experience convince him that every endeavour to reform them is fruitless and vain, let him

Neglect the grumblers of an envious age,
Vapid in spleen, or brisk in frothy rage ;
Critics, who, ere they understand, defame ;
And seeming friends, who only do not blame ;
And puppet prattlers, whose unconscious throat
Transmits what the pert witling prompts by rote :
Let him neglect this blind and babbling crowd,
To enjoy the favour of the WISE and GOOD.

Slander,

Slander, however, by fixing her talons on the most virtuous characters, generally defeats her own malice, and proclaims their merit. It may, indeed, tend to diminish their inclination for general society, and to render them in some degree apprehensive of the danger of even well-deserved fame. “Durable fame,” says PETRARCH, “is only to be derived from the practice of virtue, and from such works as are worthy of descending from generation to generation. As to praters, gowned gentlemen that walk in their silks, glitter in their jewels, and are pointed at by the people, all their bravery and pomp, their shew of knowledge, and their thundering speeches, last only with their lungs, and then vanish into thin smoke ; for the acquisition of wealth, and the desires of ambition, are no witnesses of true desert. I think I shall have fame after my death ; and that is a fame from which no profit is derived ; but, on the contrary, frequently injures while alive the person who is to enjoy it when dead. What procured the destruction of CICERO, DEMOSTHENES, and ZENO, but foul and haggard envy of their fame ? What brought the chosen men of the great ship ARGOS to COLCHIS, but the fame of that king’s riches ? For what else was signified by the *Golden Fleece*, but the riches seized by these marauders, destitute of true riches, and who were clad with fleeces not their own ?”

Many,

Many, indeed, whose merits have cast a radiance round their characters, have hidden its splendors within the shades of retirement, to avoid giving uneasiness to envy ; and, by being deprived of that warm and inspiring tribute of applause which they had gloriously and justly earned, have, in some instances at least, indulged too keen a sense of the depravity of mankind. Solon, after having in vain exhorted the Athenians to resist the tyranny of PISISTRATUS, and save the liberties of that country on which he had conferred such distinguished services, returned to his own house, and placing his weapons at the street door, exclaimed, as a last effort, “ *I have done all in my power to save my country, and defend its law ;*” and then retired from the tumults of public life, to weep in silence over the servility of the Athenians, and the fate of ATHENS.* History affords many illustrious instances, both ancient and modern,

* “ It would,” said SOLON, “ have been much easier for the Athenians to repress the advances of tyranny, and prevent its establishment; but now that it is established, and grown to some height, it would be the more glorious to demolish it.” His friends, alarmed by the dangers to which he exposed himself by these observations, told him, that the tyrant would certainly put him to death; and asked him what he trusted to when he went such imprudent lengths. He answered, “ *To Old Age.*” PISISTRATUS, however, when he had fully established himself, made his court to SOLON, and treated him with so much kindness and respect, that he became, as it were, his counsellor, and gave sanction to many of his proceedings.

modern, of the like kind ; for there never was a statesman who possessed a great mind, and manly feelings, that did not, even during the plentitude of his power, occasionally wish to escape from the incorrigible vices which prevail in courts, to the enjoyment of the more innocent pleasures and humble virtues which surround the cottage. Such exalted characters cannot observe, without the highest disgust, and keenest indignation, the virtues of the best, and the services of the bravest, men of the nation, blasted by the envious breath of brainless placemen, or the insidious insinuations of female favourites, whose whole time is employed in caressing their monkeys and parrots, or in aspersing the merits of those who boldly seek their fortune by the open and manly road of true desert, and not by the deep, dark and crooked paths of flattery and intrigue. Can such a man behold the double dealing and deceitful artifices by which the excellency of princes is corrupted, their imaginations dazzled, their discernment blinded, and their minds led astray, without feeling uncommon indignation ? Certainly not. But however acutely his bosom may feel, or his tongue express, his sense of such prevailing practices, he must still be forced to see, with even a more contemptuous and painful sensation, that envious rage, and jealous asperity, which burst from the cringing crowd of mean and abject courtiers,

tiers, on hearing the monarch, in the grateful feelings of his heart, applaud the eminent and faithful services of some gallant officer. DION was the principal statesman at the court of DIONYSIUS, and the deliverer of *Sicily*. When the younger DIONYSIUS succeeded to the throne of his father, DION, in the first council that he held, spoke with so much propriety on the existing state of affairs, and on the measures which ought to be taken, that the surrounding courtiers appeared to be mere children in comparison. By the freedom of his councils he exposed in a strong light the slavish principles of those, who, through a timorous dissimulation, advised such measures as they thought would please their prince, rather than such as might advance his interest. But what alarmed them most, were the steps he proposed to take with regard to the impending war with CARTHAGE; for he offered either to go in person to CARTHAGE, and settle an honourable peace with the *Carthaginians*, or, if war should be inevitable, to fit out and maintain fifty galleys at his own expence. DIONYSIUS was pleased with the magnificence of his spirit; but the courtiers felt that it made them appear little; and agreeing that, at all events, DION was to be crushed, they spared, for that purpose, no calumny that malice could suggest. They represented to the king, that this favourite certainly meant to make himself
master

master by sea, and by that means to obtain the kingdom for his sister's children. There was, moreover, another and an obvious cause of their hatred to him, in the reserve of his manners, and the sobriety of his life. They led the young and ill-educated king through every species of debauchery, and were the shameless panders of his wrong-directed passions. Their enmity to DION, who had no taste for luxurious enjoyments, was a thing of course; and as he refused to partake with them in their vices, they resolved to strip him of his virtues; to which they gave the name of those vices as are supposed to resemble them. His gravity of manners they called pride; his freedom of speech, insolence; his declining to join in their licentiousness, contempt. It is true there was a natural haughtiness in his deportment, and an asperity that was unsociable, and difficult of access; so that it is not to be wondered if he found no ready admission to the ears of a young king already spoiled by flattery. Willing to impute the irregularities of DIONYSIUS to ignorance and a bad education, DION endeavoured to engage him in a course of liberal studies, and to give him a taste for those sciences which have a tendency to moral improvement. But in this wise and virtuous resolution he was opposed by all the artifices of court intrigue.

Men, in proportion as their minds are dignified with noble sentiments, and their hearts susceptible of refined sensibility, feel a justifiable aversion to the society of such characters, and shrink from the scenes they frequent; but they should cautiously guard against the intrusion of that austerity and moroseness, with which such a conduct is but too apt to inspire the most benevolent minds. Disgusted by the vices and follies of the age, the mind becomes insensibly impressed with a hatred toward the species, and loses, by degrees, that mild and humane temper, which is so indispensibly necessary to the enjoyment of social happiness. Even he who merely observes the weak or vicious frailties of his fellow-creatures with an intention to study philosophically the nature and disposition of MAN, cannot avoid remembering their defects without severity, and viewing the character he contemplates with contempt, especially if he happens to be the object of their artifices, and the dupe of their villainies. Contempt is closely allied to hatred; and hatred of mankind will corrupt, in time, the fairest mind: it tinges, by degrees, every object with the bile of misanthropy; perverts the judgment; and at length looks indiscriminately with an evil eye on the good and bad; engenders suspicion, fear, jealousy, revenge, and all the black catalogue of unworthy and malignant

nant

nant passions : and when these dreadful enemies have extirpated every generous sentiment from the breast, the unhappy victim abhors society, disclaims his species, sighs, like ST. HYACINTH, for some distant and secluded island, and, with savage barbarity, defends the inviolability of its boundaries by the cruel repulsion, and, perhaps, the death, of those unhappy mortals whom misfortune may drive, helpless and unpitied, to its inhospitable shores.*

E 3

But

* The danger of extirpating every kind and benevolent sentiment of the mind, and of corrupting every tender and humane feeling of the heart, by inordinately indulging an antipathy to mankind, is finely described by SHAKESPEARE in the horrid invectives he has put into the mouth of the too generous TIMON, who had sought that shelter and support from the Athenian woods, which had been denied to him by the baseness of those friends whom his former bounty had fed, and in whose company he had, by an indiscreet liberality, met his ruin.

“ Let me look back upon thee, O, thou wall
That girdest in those wolves ! Dive in the earth,
And fence not Athens ! Matrons, turn incontinent ;
Obedience, fail in children ; slaves and fools,
Pluck the grave wrinkled senate from the bench,
And minister in their steads. To general filth
Convert i'th' instant green virginity !
Do it in your parents' eyes. Bankrupts, hold fast ;
Rather than render back, out with your knives,
And cut your masters' throats. Bound servants, steal ;
Large handed robbers your grave masters are,
And pill by law.—Son of sixteen,

Pluck

But if misanthropy be capable of producing such direful effects on well-disposed minds, how shocking must be the character whose disposition, naturally rancorous, is heightened and inflamed by an habitual hatred and malignancy towards his fellow-creatures ! In *Switzerland* I once beheld a monster of this description : I was compelled

Pluck the lin'd crutch from thy old limping fire ;
 With it beat out his brains. Fear and piety,
 Religion to the gods, peace, justice, truth,
 Domestic awe, night rest, and neighbourhood,
 Instruction, manners, mysteries, and trades,
 Decline to your confounding contraries,
 And let confusion live ! Plagues incident to men,
 Your potent and infectious fevers heap
 On Athens, ripe for stroke ! Thou cold sciatica,
 Cripple our senators, that their limbs may halt
 As lamely as their manners. Lust and licence,
 Creep in the minds and manners of our youth,
 That 'gainst the stream of virtue they may strive,
 And drown themselves in riot ! Itches and blains
 Sore all the Athenian bosoms ; and their crops
 Be general leprosy. Breath infect breath,
 That their society, like their friendship, may
 Be merely poison. Nothing will I bear from thee
 But nakedness, thou detestable town !
 Take thou that too with multiplying banns.
 TIMON will to the woods, where he shall find
 The unkindest beast much kinder than mankind.
 The gods confound, oh, hear me, good gods all,
 The Athenians both within and out the wall ;
 And grant, as TIMON grows, his hate may grow
 To the whole race of mankind, high and low."

pelled to visit him by the duties of my profession ; but I shudder while I recollect the enormity of his character. His body was almost as deformed as his mind. Enmity was seated on his distorted brow. Scales of livid incrustation, the joint produce of his corrupted body and distempered mind, covered his face. His horrid figure made me fancy that I saw Medusa's serpents wreathing their baleful folds among the black and matted locks of his dishevelled hair ; while his red and fiery eyes glared like malignant meteors through the obscurity of his impending eye-brows. Mischief was his sole delight, his greatest luxury, and his highest joy. To sow discord among his neighbours, and to tear open the closing wounds of misery, was his only occupation. His residence was the resort of the disorderly, the receptacle of the vicious, and the asylum of the guilty. Collecting around him the turbulent and discontented of every description, he became the patron of injustice, the persecutor of virtue, the protector of villainy, the perpetrator of malice, the inventor of fraud, the propagator of calumny, and the zealous champion of cruelty and revenge ; directing, with malignant aim, the barbed shafts of his adherents equally against the comforts of private peace, and the blessings of public tranquillity. The bent and inclination of his nature had been so aggravated and confirmed

by the “multiplying villanies of his life,” that it was impossible for him to refrain one moment from the practice of them, without feeling uneasiness and discontent; and he never appeared perfectly happy, but when new opportunities occurred to glut his infernal soul with the spectacle of human miseries.

The TIMON of *Lucian* was in some measure excusable for his excessive hatred to mankind, by the unparalleled wrongs they had heaped upon him. The inexorable antipathy he entertained against his species, had been provoked by injuries almost too great for the common fortitude of humanity to endure. His probity, humanity, and charity to the poor, had been the ruin of him; or rather his own folly, easiness of disposition, and want of judgment in his choice of friends. He never discovered that he was giving away his all to wolves and ravens. Whilst these vultures were preying on his liver, he thought them his best friends, and that they fed upon him out of pure love and affection. After they had gnawed him all round, ate his bones bare, and, whilst there was any marrow in them, sucked it carefully out, they left him cut down to the roots and withered; and, so far from relieving him, or assisting him in their turns, would not so much as know or look upon him. This made
him

him turn a common labourer; and, dressed in his skin garment, he tilled the earth for hire; ashamed to shew himself in the city, and venting his rage against the ingratitude of those, who, enriched, as they had been, by him, now proudly passed along without noticing him. But although such a character is not to be despised or neglected, no provocation, however great, can justify the violent and excessive invectives which he profanely bellowed forth from the bottom of HYMETTUS: “ This spot of earth shall
“ be my only habitation while I live; and,
“ when I am dead, my sepulchre. From this time
“ forth, it is my fixed resolution to have no
“ commerce or connection with mankind; but
“ to despise them, and avoid it. I will pay no
“ regard to acquaintance, friendship, pity, or
“ compassion. To pity the distressed, or to relieve the indigent, I shall consider as a weakness; nay, as a crime: my life, like that of
“ the beasts of the field, shall be spent in solitude; and TIMON alone shall be TIMON’s
“ friend. I will treat all besides as enemies and
“ betrayers. To converse with them were profanation; to herd with them, impiety. Accursed be the day that brings them to my
“ sight! I will look upon men, in short, as no
“ more than so many statues of brass or stone;
“ will make no truce, have no connection with
“ them.

“ them. My retreat shall be the boundary to
 “ separate us for ever. Relations, friends, and
 “ country, are empty names, respected by fools
 “ alone. Let TIMON only be rich, and despise
 “ all the world beside. Abhorring idle praise,
 “ and odious flattery, he shall be delighted with
 “ himself alone. Alone shall he sacrifice to the
 “ gods, feast alone, be his own neighbour, and
 “ his own companion. I am determined to be
 “ alone for life; and when I die, to place the
 “ crown upon my own head. The fairest name
 “ I would be distinguished by, is that of MISAN-
 “ THROPE. I would be known and marked out
 “ by my asperity of manners; by moroseness,
 “ cruelty, anger, and inhumanity. Were I
 “ to see a man perishing in the flames, and
 “ imploring me to extinguish them, I would
 “ throw pitch or oil into the fire to increase it: or,
 “ if the winter flood should overwhelm another,
 “ who, with outstretched hands, should beg me
 “ to assist him, I would plunge him still deeper
 “ in the stream, that he might never rise again.
 “ Thus shall I be revenged of mankind. This
 “ is TIMON’s law, and this hath TIMON rati-
 “ fied. I should be glad, however, that all
 “ might know how I abound in riches,* be-
 “ cause

* JUPITER hearing the complaints of the liberal-minded
 TIMON, resolved to relieve his distress, and sent PLUTUS, the
 god

“ cause that I know will make them miserable.”

The moral to be drawn from this dialogue of the celebrated Grecian philosopher, is the extreme danger to which the best and most benevolent characters may be exposed, by an indiscreet and unchecked indulgence of those painful

E 6

feelings

god of wealth, accompanied by MERCURY, to restore him to riches, to whom TIMON makes this noble reply. “ To you, MERCURY, and to JUPITER, for your care of me, I acknowledge my obligation : but as for this PLUTUS, I will by no means accept of him, because he was the author of all my past misfortunes, gave me up to flatterers and evil counsellors, corrupted me with perpetual temptations, and rendered me the object of hatred and of envy ; but, above all, because he perfidiously deserted me. POVERTY, on the other hand, my best and truest friend, exercised me with wholesome labours, supplied me with what was necessary, taught me to condemn every thing superfluous, and to rely upon myself alone ; shewed me what true riches were ; those treasures which neither the fawning sycophant, nor the angry multitude, the time-serving orator, nor the ensnaring tyrant, can ever wrest from me. Thus while with pleasure I till this little field, my spade most abundantly supplies me with every thing that is really necessary. Return, therefore, good MERCURY, the way you came, and carry PLUTUS back with you to JUPITER. I shall be satisfied if he makes fools of all mankind, as he has of me.”—At length, however, he obeyed, and agreed, in compliance with the will of the gods, to be rich again, upon condition that they should preserve him in his innocence and happiness, and prevent the wealth they intended to bestow, from making him miserable, by teaching him how to use it.

feelings with which the baseness and ingratitude of the world are apt to wound the heart. There are, however, those who, without having received ill treatment from the world, foster in their bosoms a splenetic animosity against society, and secretly exult in the miseries and misfortunes of their fellow-creatures. Indulging themselves in the indolent habits of vice and vanity, and feeling a mortification in being disappointed of those rewards which virtuous industry can alone bestow, they seek a gloomy solitude, to hide them from those lights which equally discover the errors of vice and the rectitude of virtue. Unable to attain glory for themselves, and incapable of enduring the lustre of it in others, they creep into discontented retirement, from which they only emerge to envy the satisfaction which accompanies real merit, to calumniate the character to which it belongs; and, like SATAN, on the view of Paradise, to “see undelighted all delight.”

There are, however, a class of a very different description, who, unopposed by moody melancholy, untinctured by petulance or spleen, free from resentment, and replete with every generous thought and manly sentiment, calmly and contentedly retire from society, to enjoy, uninterruptedly, a happy communion with those high and enlightened minds, who have adorned
by

by their actions the page of history, enlarged by their talents the powers of the human mind, and encreased by their virtues the happiness of mankind.

He who would know RETIREMENT's joy refin'd,
The fair recess must seek with chearful mind :
No Cynic's pride, no bigot's heated brain,
No frustrate hope, nor love's fantastic pain,
With him must enter the sequester'd cell,
Who means with pleasing SOLITUDE to dwell ;
But equal passions let his bosom rule ;
A judgment candid, and a temper cool ;
Enlarg'd with knowledge, and in conscience clear ;
Above LIFE's empty hopes, and DEATH's vain fear.

RETIREMENT, however solitary it may be, when entered into with such a temper of mind, instead of creating or encouraging any hatred towards the species, raises our ideas of the possible dignity of human nature ; disposes our hearts to feel, and our hands to relieve, the misfortunes and necessities of our fellow-creatures ; calls to our minds what high, capacious powers lie folded up in man ; and giving to every part of creation its finest forms, and richest colours, exhibits to our admiration, its brightest glories and highest perfections, and induces us to transplant the charm which exists in our own bosoms into the bosoms of others.

The spacious west,
And all the teeming regions of the south,

Hold

Hold not a quarry, to the curious flight
 Of knowledge, half so tempting, or so fair,
 As MAN to MAN: nor only where the smiles
 Of love invite; nor only where the applause
 Of cordial honour turns the attentive eye
 On Virtue's graceful deeds: for since the course
 Of things external acts in different ways
 On human apprehension, as the hand
 Of nature temper'd to a different frame
 Peculiar minds, so haply where the powers
 Of fancy neither lessen nor enlarge
 The images of things, but paint, in all
 Their genuine hues, the features which they wear
 In nature, there opinions will be true,
 And action right—————."

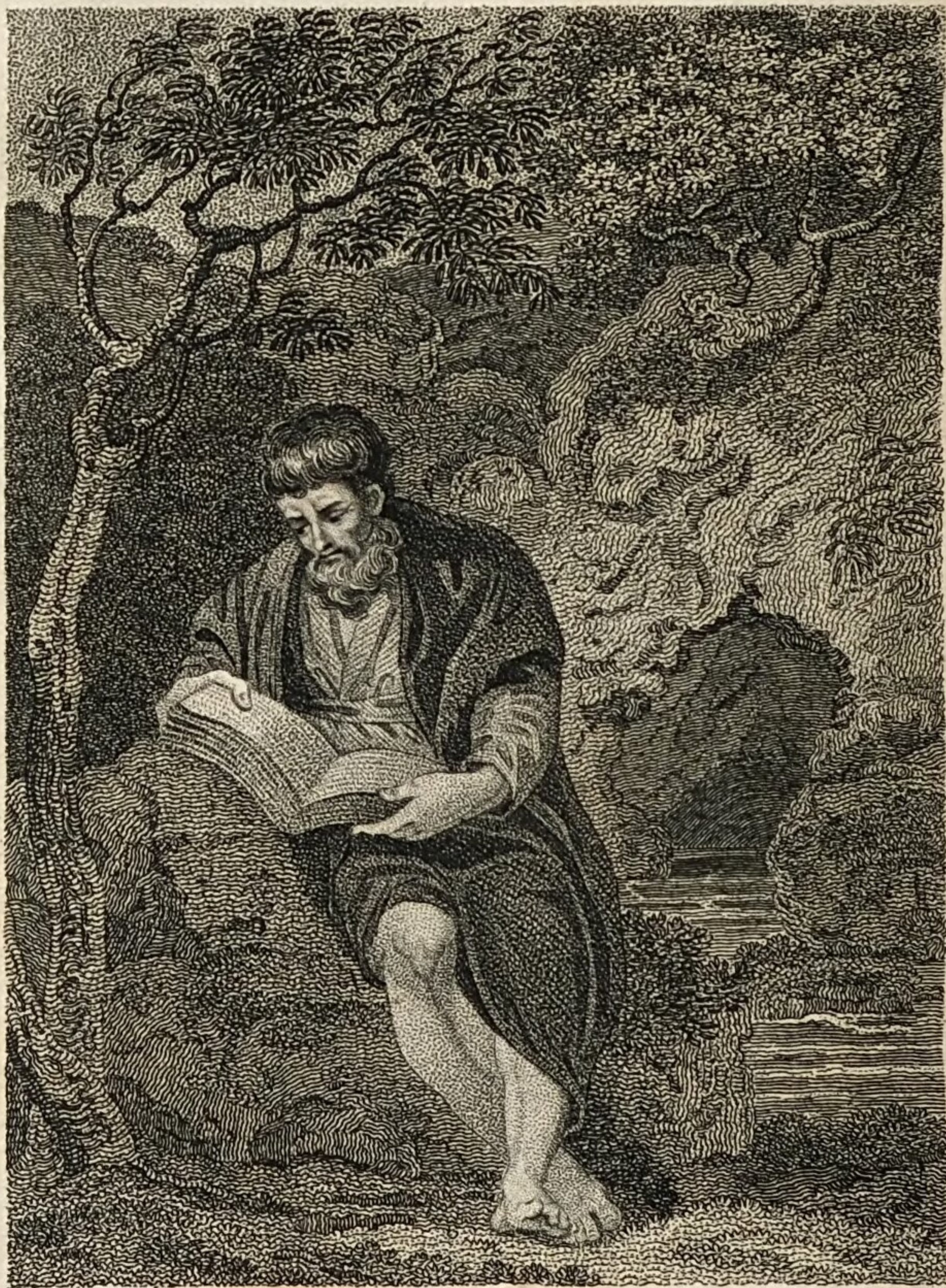
It is, indeed, not the least of those many benefits which humane and generous characters derive from SOLITUDE, that, by enabling them to form a just and true estimate of men and things, it becomes the surest remedy against misanthropy. The deformed features of vice being out of their view, and seldom in their contemplation, they regard the vicious with an eye of pity; and while they are endeavouring to correct their own defects, they are taught to treat the defects of others with candour, to observe their virtues without envy, and their vices without rancour. The moral and intellectual faculties of the soul, are invigorated and enlarged by the habits of reflection which retirement creates. Its benign influence, indeed, has been acknowledged

ledged not only by philosophers, poets, and heroes, but by all who, endeavouring, by the exertions of genius, and the exercise of benevolence, to raise themselves above the common level of humanity, have resigned the vain and empty splendors of public life, for the silence and simplicity of rural shades, where, screened from the intrusion of vice, and the uninteresting details of petty occupations, they have enjoyed all that can add dignity to the nature, or real splendor to the character of man.

Is aught so fair
 In all the dewy landscapes of the spring,
 In the bright eye of Hesper or the morn,
 In nature's fairest forms is aught so fair
 As virtuous Friendship, as the candid blush
 Of him who strives with Fortune to be just ?
 The graceful tear, that streams for others' woes ;
 Or the mild majesty of private life,
 Where peace with ever-blooming olive crowns
 The gate ; where honour's liberal hands effuse
 Unenvied treasures, and the snowy wings
 Of innocence and love protect the scene ?

A rational Solitude, while it corrects the passions, improves the benevolent dispositions of the heart, increases the energies of the mind, and draws forth its latent powers. The Athenian orator CALLISTRATUS was to plead in the cause
 which

which the city of OROPUS had depending ; and the expectation of the public was greatly raised both by the powers of the orator, which were then in the highest repute, and the importance of the trial. DEMOSTHENES hearing the governors and tutors agree among themselves to attend the trial, with much importunity prevailed on his master to take him to hear the pleaders. The master having some acquaintance with the officer who opened the court, got his young pupil a seat where he could hear the orators without being seen. CALLISTRATUS had great success, and his abilities were extremely admired. DEMOSTHENES was fired with a spirit of emulation. When he saw with what distinction the orator was conducted home, and complimented by the people, he was struck still more with the power of that commanding eloquence which could carry all before it. From this time, therefore, he bade adieu to the other studies and exercises in which boys are engaged, and applied himself with great assiduity to declaiming, in hopes of being one day numbered among the orators. SATYRUS, the player, who was an acquaintance of his, and to whom he lamented, after having been for some time called to THE BAR, “ that, though he had almost sacrificed his health to his studies, he could gain no favour
with



Thurston del

Ridley sc

Jerome in the Wilderness.

Pub. by Verner & Hood, 31, Poultry, 1 Augst 1805.

with the people," promised to provide him with a remedy, if he would repeat some speech in EURIPIDES or SOPHOCLES. When DEMOSTHENES had finished his recitation, SATYRUS pronounced the same speech ; and he did it with such propriety of action, and so much in character, that it appeared to the orator quite a different passage ; and DEMOSTHENES now understanding how much grace and dignity ACTION adds to the best oration, quitted the practice of composition, and building a subterraneous study, repaired thither, for two or three months together, to form his action, and exercise his voice ; and by this means formed that strong, impassioned, and irresistible eloquence which rendered him the glory of ATHENS, and the admiration of the world. Most of the exalted heroes, both of GREECE and ROME, who devoted their attention to arts and to arms, acquired their chief excellency in their respective pursuits, by retiring from public observation, and cultivating their talents in the silence of SOLITUDE. ST. JEROME, the most learned of all the Latin fathers, and son of the celebrated EUSEBIUS, retired from the persecution of religious fury into an obscure and dreary desert in *Syria*, where he attained that rich, animated, and sublime style of eloquence, which afterwards so essentially contributed to support the rising church, and
to

to enlighten while it dazzled the Christian world.* The DRUIDS, or ministers of religion among

* ST. JEROME was born at *Stridon*, a city of the ancient PANNONIA, about the year 340. He studied at *Rome* under DONATUS, the learned grammarian. After having received baptism, he went into Gaul, and there transcribed ST. HILARY's book *De Synodis*. He then went into AQUILEIA, where he contracted a friendship with HELIODORUS, who prevailed on him to travel with him into Thrace, Pontus, Bithynia, Galatia, and Cappadocia. In 372 he retired into the desert, where he was persecuted by the orthodox of MELITIUS's party for being a *Sabellian*, because he had made use of the word *Hypostasis*, which had been used by the Council of ROME in 369. This obliged him to go to JERUSALEM, where he applied himself to the study of the Hebrew language, in order to obtain a more perfect knowledge of the holy scriptures; and about this time he consented to be ordained, on condition that he should not be confined to any particular church. In 381 he went to *Constantinople*, to hear ST. GREGORY of *Nazianzen*; and the following year returned to *Rome*, where he was made secretary to POPE DAMASUS. He there instructed many Roman ladies in piety, and the knowledge of the sciences, which exposed him to the calumnies of those whom he zealously reprov'd for their irregularities; and POPE SIRICIUS not having all the esteem for him which his learning and virtue justly entitled him to, he left *Rome*, and returned to the monastery of *Bethlehem*, where he employed himself in writing against those whom he called *heretics*, especially against VIGILANTIUS and JOVIANIAN. He had a quarrel with JOHN OF JERUSALEM and RUFINUS about the *Originists*. He was the first who wrote against PELAGIUS, and died on the 30th of September, 420, at about eighty years of age. During the last moments of his life, he regarded the weeping friends that surrounded his bed, with

among the ancient Gauls, Britons, and Germans, retired, in the intervals of their sacred functions, into awful forests and consecrated groves, where they passed their time in useful study and pious prayers; and while they acquired a complete knowledge of astrology, geometry, natural philosophy, politics, geography, morals, and religion, rendered themselves happy and revered, and produced, by the wise instruction they were capable of affording to others, but particularly to youth, whose education they superintended, a bright succession of priests, legislators, counselors, judges, physicians, philosophers, and tutors, to the respective nations in which they resided.

Averse to public noise, ambitious strife,
 And all the splendid ills of busy life,
 Through latent paths, unmark'd by vulgar eye,
 Are there who wish to pass unheeded by?

Where

with mild resignation, and apparent joy. “ My dear friends,” said he, “ partake of the pleasure and happiness I now feel. My soul is about to take its flight from the thralldom of the world into the regions of eternal bliss. Men have mistakenly described *death* to be a dreadful thing; it is only so to the vain and wicked. Since the doctrines of Christianity have been revealed, even tortures cannot render it displeasing, as it is always accompanied, in the minds of those who love their Saviour JESUS CHRIST, with the idea of an eternal felicity. If you would wish to experience the sweets of dying in perfect peace, let me exhort you to live in the practice of Virtue, and to follow the precepts of our holy Religion.”

Where calm RETIREMENT's sacred pleasures move,
The hour contemplative, or friend they love :
Yet not by spleen or contemplation led,
Forbear ambitious giddy heights to tread ;
Who not inglorious spend their peaceful day,
While SCIENCE, lovely star ! directs their way.
Flows there not something good from such as these ?
No useful product from the man of ease ?
And shall the muse no social merit boast ?
Are all her vigils to the public lost ?
Tho' noisy pride may scorn her silent toil,
Fair are the fruits which bless her happy soil :
There every plant of useful produce grows,
There science springs, and there instruction flows :
There true philosophy erects her school,
There plans her problems, and there forms her rule ;
There every seed of every art began,
And all that eases life, and brightens man.

The modern JULIAN, the justly celebrated
FREDERICK, king of PRUSSIA, derives the highest
advantages from his dignified retirement at
Sans Souci, where he contrives the means of
hurling inevitable destruction against the enemies
of his country ; listens to and relieves, with
all the anxiety of a tender parent, the complaints
and injuries of his meanest subjects ; and
recreates his excursive mind, by revising and
correcting his immortal works for the admiration
of posterity. Philosophy, poetry, and politics,
are the successive objects of his attention ; and
while he extends his views, and strengthens his
understanding,

understanding, by the study of ancient wisdom, he ameliorates his heart by the delightful offerings of the muses, and increases the public strength by the wise and economical management of his resources. An awful silence, interrupted only by gentle airs, with which it is refreshed, pervades this delightful retreat. It was during the twilight of an autumnal evening that I visited this solemn scene. As I approached the apartment of this philosophic hero, I discovered him sitting “nobly pensive” near a small table, from which shone the feeble rays of a common taper. No jealous centinels, or ceremonious chamberlain, impeded my progress, by the scrutinizing enquiries of suspicion and mistrust; and I walked free and unchecked, except by respect and veneration, through the humble, unostentatious retreat of this extraordinary man. All characters, however high and illustrious they may be, who wish to attain a comprehensive view of things, and to shine in the highest spheres of virtue, must learn the rudiments of glory under the discipline of occasional retirement.

SOLITUDE is frequently sought from an inclination to extend the knowledge of our talents and characters to those with whom we have no opportunity of being immediately acquainted; by preparing with greater care, and closer application,

cation, for the inspection of our contemporaries, works worthy of the fame we are so anxious to acquire: but it seldom happens, alas! that those whose labours are most pregnant with instruction and delight, have received from the age or country in which they lived, or even from the companions with whom they associated, the tribute of kindness or applause that is justly due to their merits. The work which is stigmatized and traduced by the envy, ignorance, or local prejudices of a country for whose delight and instruction it was particularly intended, frequently receives from the generous suffrages of impartial and unprejudiced strangers, the highest tribute of applause. Even those pretended friends under whose auspices it was at first undertaken, upon whose advice it proceeded, and upon whose judgment it was at length published, no sooner hear its praises resounded from distant quarters, than they permit the poisoned shafts of calumny to fly unaverted around the unsuspecting author, and warrant, by their silence, or assist, by their sneers, every insidious insinuation against his motives or his principles. This species of malevolence has been feelingly painted by the celebrated PETRARCH: "No sooner had my fame," says he, "risen above the level of that which my contemporaries had acquired, than every tongue bab-
bled, and every pen was brandished against
me:

“ me : those who had before appeared to be my
“ dearest friends, instantly became my deadliest
“ enemies : the shafts of envy were industriously
“ directed against me from every quarter :
“ the critics, to whom my poetry had before
“ been much more familiar than their psalms
“ or their prayers, seized, with malignant delight,
“ every opportunity of traducing my morals ;
“ and those with whom I had been most intimate,
“ were the most eager to injure my character,
“ and destroy my fame.” The student, however,
ought not to be discouraged by this instance of
envy and ingratitude. He who, conscious of his
merit, learns to depend only on himself for support,
will forget the injustice of the world, and draw his
comfort and satisfaction from more infallible sources :
like the truly benevolent and great, he will confer his
favours on the public without the expectation of a
return ; and look with perfect indifference upon all
the efforts his treacherous friends, or open enemies,
are capable of using. He will, like *PETRARCH*, appeal
to posterity for his reward ; and the justice and
generosity of future ages will preserve his memory,
and transmit his fame to succeeding generations,
heightened and adorned in proportion as it has been
contemporaneously mutilated and depressed.

The genius of many noble-minded authors, particularly in GERMANY, are obscured and blighted by the thick and baneful fogs with which ignorance and envy overwhelm their works. Unable to withstand the incessant opposition they meet with, the powers of the mind grow feeble and relaxed; and many a fair design and virtuous pursuit is quitted in despair. How frequently does the desponding mind exclaim, “I feel my powers influenced by the
“affections of the heart. I am certainly inca-
“pable of doing to any individual an intentional
“injury, and I seek with anxiety every oppor-
“tunity of doing good; but, alas! my motives
“are perverted, my designs misrepresented, my
“endeavours counteracted, my very person ri-
“diculed, and my character defamed.” There are, indeed, those whose courage and fortitude no opposition can damp, and no adversity subdue; whose firm and steady minds proceed with determined resolution to accomplish their designs in defiance of all resistance; and whose refulgent talents drive away the clouds of surrounding dulness like fogs before the sun. WIELAND, the happy WIELAND, the adopted child of every muse, the favourite pupil of the Graces, formed the powers of his extraordinary mind in a lonely and obscure retreat, the little village of *Biberach*, in the circle of *Suabia*, and
5 thereby

thereby laid the foundation for that indisputable glory he has since attained. In solitude and silence, he enriched his mind with all the stores that art and science could produce, and enabled himself to delight and instruct mankind, by a forming the sober mien of philosophy, and the lively smiles of wit, with the true spirit and irresistible charms of poetry. Retirement is the true parent of the great and good, and the kind nurse of nature's powers.* It is to occasional retirement that POLITICS owe the ablest statesmen, and PHILOSOPHY the most celebrated sages. Did ARISTOTLE, the Peripatetic chief, compose his

VOL. II.

F

profound

* “ To be able to procure its own entertainment, and to subsist upon its own stock,” says Dr. JOHNSON, “ is not the prerogative of every mind. There are, indeed, understandings so fertile and comprehensive, that they can always feed reflection with new supplies, and suffer nothing from the preclusion of adventitious amusements; as some cities have within their own walls enclosed ground enough to feed their inhabitants in a siege. But others live only from day to day, and must be constantly enabled, by foreign supplies, to keep out the encroachments of languor and stupidity. Such could not, indeed, be blamed for hovering within the reach of their usual pleasures, more than any other animal for not quitting its native element, were not their faculties contracted by their own fault. But let not those who go into the country merely because they dare not be left alone at home, boast their love of nature, or their qualifications for solitude; nor pretend that they receive instantaneous infusions of wisdom from the dryads; and are able, when they leave smoke and noise behind, to act, to think, or to reason for themselves.”

profound systems in the tumultuous court of PHILIP, or were the sublime theories of his master conceived among the noisy feasts of the tyrant DIONYSIUS? No: The celebrated groves of THE ACADEMY, and the shades of ATARNYA, bear witness of the important advantages which, in the opinion both of PLATO and ARISTOTLE, learning may derive from a rational retirement.*

These

* PLATO, the illustrious philosopher of antiquity, was by descent an Athenian, though the place of his birth was the island of Egina. The time of his birth is commonly placed in the beginning of the 88th olympiad, or about 430 years before the Christian æra. He gave early indication of an extensive and original genius. He applied with great diligence to the study of the arts of painting and poetry, and made such proficiency in the latter as to produce an epic poem, which, upon comparing it with the poem of HOMER, he committed to the flames. At the age of twenty he composed a dramatic piece; but, after he had given it to the performers, happening to attend upon a discourse of SOCRATES, he was so captivated by his eloquence, that he reclaimed his tragedy without suffering it to be acted, renounced the muses, burnt all his poems, and applied himself wholly to the study of wisdom. After some time he settled in *Athens*, and executed the design which he had long had in contemplation, of forming a new school for the instruction of youth in the principles of philosophy. The place which he made choice of for this purpose was a public grove, called THE ACADEMY, from HECADEMUS, who left it to the citizens for the purpose of gymnastic exercises. Adorned with statues, temples, and sepulchres, planted with lofty plane trees, and intersected by a gentle stream, it afforded a delightful retreat for philosophy and the muses. This school soon became famous, and its master

was

These great men, like all others who preceded or have followed them, found in the ease and quietude of retirement, the best means of forming their minds and extending their discoveries. The celebrated LEIBNITZ, to whom the world is

F 2

deeply

was ranked among the most eminent philosophers. But greatness was never yet exempted from envy. The distinguished reputation of PLATO brought upon him the hatred of his former companions in the school of SOCRATES, and they loaded him with detraction and obloquy. DIOGENES, the Cynic, was vastly offended at the politeness and fine taste of PLATO, and used to catch at all opportunities of snarling at him. He dined one day at his table with other company, and trampling upon the tapestry with his dirty feet, uttered this brutish sarcasm: "*I trample upon the pride of PLATO.*" To which PLATO wisely reparteed, "*With greater pride.*" The fame of PLATO drew disciples to him from all parts, and among the rest the great ARISTOTLE. He died in the 81st year of his age: but his disciple, who was born at *Stagyræ*, a small city in MACEDON, in the 99th olympiad, about 384 years before the birth of Christ, preserved the memory, and propagated the principles, of his illustrious master. The last fourteen years of his life he spent mostly at ATHENS, surrounded with every assistance which men and books could afford him for prosecuting his philosophical enquiries. PHILIP confided the education of his son ALEXANDER the Great to his care. "I thank the gods," said the king, in his introductory letter, "not so much for having given me a son, as for their having given him to me during the life of ARISTOTLE; and I have no doubt but that you will make him worthy of me and of his country." He died at the age of sixty-three, far from his country and his friends. RAPIN has compared the talents and characters of these two extraordinary men with great spirit and ability.

deeply indebted, passed a great part of every year at an humble, quiet, retired and beautiful villa which he possessed in the vicinity of HANOVER.

To this catalogue of causes conducing to a love of Solitude, or hatred of Society, we may add RELIGION and FANATICISM. The benign genius of Religion leads the mind to a love of retirement from motives the highest, the most noble, and most really interesting, that can possibly be conceived, and produces the most perfect state of human happiness, by instilling into the heart the most virtuous propensities, and inspiring the mind with its finest energies : but Fanaticism must ever be unhappy ; for it proceeds from a subversion of nature itself, is formed on a perversion of reason, and a violation of truth : it is the vice of low and little understandings, is produced by an ignorance of human nature, a misapprehension of the Deity, and cannot be practised without a renunciation of real virtue. The passion for retirement which a sense of RELIGION enforces, rises in proportion as the heart is pure and the mind correct ; but the disposition to Solitude which FANATICISM creates, arises from a wild, enthusiastic notion of inspiration, and increases in proportion as the heart is corrupt, and the mind deranged. RELIGION is the offspring of Truth and Love, and the parent of Benevolence,

Benevolence, Hope, and Joy : but the monster FANATICISM is the child of Discontent, and her followers are Fear and Sorrow. Religion is not confined to cells and closets, nor restrained to fullen retirement ; these are the gloomy retreats of Fanaticism, by which she endeavours to break those chains of benevolence and social affection, that link the welfare of every individual with that of the whole. The greatest honour we can pay to the Author of our being, is by such a chearful behaviour as discovers a mind satisfied with his dispensations. But this temper of mind is most likely to be attained by a rational retirement from the cares and pleasures of the world. “ Although,” says a celebrated preacher, “ an entire retreat from the world would lay us aside from the part for which Providence chiefly intended us, it is certain that without occasional retreat, we must act that part very ill. There will be neither consistency in the conduct, nor dignity in the character, of one who sets apart no share of his time for meditation and reflection. In the heat and bustle of life, while passion is every moment throwing false colours on the objects around us, nothing can be viewed in a just light. If you wish that reason should exert her native power, you must step aside from the crowd into the cool and silent shade. It is there that, with sober and steady eye, she examines what is good

or ill, what is wise or foolish, in human conduct: she looks back on the past, she looks forward to the future; and forms opinions, not for the present moment only, but for the whole life. How should that man discharge any part of his duty aright, who never suffers his passions to cool, who is engaged, without interruption, in the tumults of the world? This incessant stir may be called the perpetual drunkenness of life. It raises that eager fermentation of spirit which will be ever sending forth the dangerous fumes of rashness and folly. Whereas he who mingles RELIGIOUS RETREAT with worldly affairs, remains calm, and master of himself. He is not whirled round, and rendered giddy by the agitation of the world; but, from that SACRED RETIREMENT in which he has been conversant among higher objects, comes forth into the world with manly tranquillity, fortified by the principles which he has formed, and prepared for whatever may befall him. As he who is unacquainted with retreat cannot sustain any character with propriety, so neither can he enjoy the world with any advantage. Of the two classes of men who are most apt to be negligent of this duty, the *men of pleasure*, and the *men of business*, it is hard to say which suffer most, in point of enjoyment, from that neglect. To the former every moment appears to be lost which partakes not of the vivacity of amusement.

amusement. To connect one plan of gaiety with another is their whole study ; till, in a very short time, nothing remains but to tread the same beaten round, to enjoy what they have already enjoyed, and to see what they have often seen. Pleasures thus drawn to the dregs become vapid and tasteless. What might have pleased long, if enjoyed with temperance, and mingled with RETIREMENT, being devoured with such eager haste, speedily surfeits and disgusts. Hence these are the persons who, after having run through a rapid course of pleasure, after having glittered for a few years in the foremost line of public amusements, are the most apt to fly at last to a *melancholy retreat* : not led by RELIGION or reason, but driven by disappointed hopes, and exhausted spirits, to the pensive conclusion, that “ all is vanity.” If uninterrupted intercourse with the world wears out the *man of pleasure*, it no less oppresses the *man of business* and ambition. The strongest spirits must at length sink under it. The happiest temper must be soured by incessant returns of the opposition, the inconstancy, and the treachery of men : for he who lives always in the bustle of the world, lives in a perpetual warfare. Here an enemy encounters ; there a rival supplants him : the ingratitude of a friend stings him this hour, and the pride of a superior wounds him the next. In vain he flies for relief

to trifling amusements. These may afford a temporary opiate to care, but they communicate no strength to the mind ; on the contrary, they leave it more soft and defenceless, when molestation and injuries renew their attack. Let him who wishes for an effectual cure to all the wounds which the world can inflict, retire from intercourse with men to intercourse with God. When he enters into his closet, and shuts the door, let him shut out at the same time all intrusion of worldly care, and dwell among objects divine and immortal. Those fair prospects of order and peace shall there open to his view, which form the most perfect contrast to the confusion and misery of this earth. The celestial inhabitants quarrel not ; among them is neither ingratitude, nor envy, nor tumult. Men may harass one another ; but in the kingdom of God, concord and tranquillity reign for ever. From such objects there beams upon the mind of the pious man a pure and enlivening light ; there is diffused over his heart a holy calm. His agitated spirit reassumes its firmness, and regains its peace. The world sinks in its importance ; and the load of mortality and misery loses almost all its weight. The *green pastures* open and the *still waters* flow around him ; besides which *the Shepherd of Israel* guides his flock. The disturbances and alarms so formidable to those who are engaged

engaged in the tumults of the world, seem to him only like thunder rolling afar off; like the noise of distant waters, whose sound he hears, whose course he traces, but whose waves touch him not: and as RELIGIOUS RETIREMENT is thus evidently conducive to our happiness in this life, so it is absolutely necessary in order to prepare us for the life to come."

The disposition to SOLITUDE, however, of whatever kind or complexion it may be, is greatly influenced by the temper and constitution of the body, as well as by the frame and turn of the mind. The action of those causes proceeds, perhaps, by slow and insensible degrees, and varies in its form and manner in each individual; but though gradual or multiform, it at length reaches its point, and confirms the subject of it in habits of rational Retreat or unnatural Solitude.

The motives which conduce to a love of Solitude might, without doubt, be assigned to other causes; but a discussion of all the refined operations to which the mind may be exposed, and its bent and inclination determined, by the two great powers of SENSATION and REFLECTION, would be more curious than useful. Relinquishing all enquiry into the primary or remote causes of human action, to those who are fond of the

useless subtilties of metaphysics, and confining our researches to those final or immediate causes which produce this disposition to enjoy the benefits of RATIONAL RETIREMENT, or encounter the mischiefs of IRRATIONAL SOLITUDE, we shall proceed to shew the mischiefs which may result from the one, in order that they may be contrasted with the advantages which, in our former Volume, we have already shewed may be derived from the other.



CHAPTER THE THIRD.

THE DISADVANTAGES OF SOLITUDE.

THE Retirement which is not the result of cool and deliberate reason, so far from improving the feelings of the heart, or strengthening the powers of the mind, generally renders men less able to discharge the duties and endure the burthens of life. The wisest and best formed system of Retirement is, indeed, surrounded with a variety of dangers, which are not, without the greatest care and caution, easily avoided. But in every species of total Solitude, the surrounding perils are not only innumerable, but almost irresistible. It would, however, be erroneous to impute all the defects which may characterize such a recluse merely to the loneliness of his situation. There are original defects implanted by the hand of nature in every constitution, which no species of retirement or discipline can totally eradicate: there are certain vices, the seeds of which are so inherent, that no care, however great, can totally destroy.* The

F 6

advantages

* "Ambition, avarice, irresolution, fear, and inordinate desires," says MONTAIGNE, in his excellent Essay on SOLITUDE,

advantages or disadvantages arising from Retirement, will always be proportionate to the degrees of VIRTUE and VICE which prevail in the character of the recluse. It is certain that an occasional retreat from the business of the world, will greatly improve the virtues, and encrease the happiness, of him on whom nature has bestowed a sound understanding and a sensible heart; but when the heart is corrupt, the understanding weak, the imagination flighty, and the disposition depraved, Solitude only tends to increase the evil, and to render the character more rank and vicious : for whatever be the culture, the produce will unavoidably partake of the quality

TUDE, “ do not leave us when we change our country : our passions often follow us even into the cloisters and philosophic schools ; and neither desarts, caves, hair shirts, nor fasts, can disengage us from them. If a man do not first disengage both himself and his mind from the burthen with which he finds himself oppressed, motion will but make it press the harder ; as in a ship the lading is of less incumbrance when it is well settled. You do a sick man more harm than good in removing him from place to place ; you confirm the disease, by stirring him, as stakes sink deeper into the ground by being moved up and down. It is not, therefore, enough to be remote from the public ; it is not enough to shift the situation ; a man must fly from the popular dispositions that have take possession of his soul ; he must lay himself aside, and come to himself again. The disease is in the mind, which must escape from itself. A person telling SOCRATES that such a one was not improved by his travels, “ No wonder,” said SOCRATES ; “ for he travelled along with himself.”

lity of the seeds and the nature of the soil ; and Solitude, by allowing a weak and wicked mind leisure to brood over its own suggestions, recreates and rears the mischief it was intended to prevent.

“ ————— Where SOLITUDE, sad nurse of care,
To sickly musing gives the pensive mind,
There madness enters ; and the dim-ey’d fiend,
Lorn Melancholy, night and day provokes
Her own eternal wound. The sun grows pale ;
A mournful visionary light o’erspreads
The chearful face of nature ; earth becomes
A dreary desert ; and the heavens frown above.
Then various shapes of curs’d illusion rise ;
Whate’er the wretched fear, creating fear
Forms out of nothing ; and with monsters teems
Unknown in hell. The prostrate soul beneath
A load of huge imagination heaves ;
And all the horrors that the GUILTY feel
With anxious flutterings wake the guilty breast.
From other cares absolv’d, the busy mind
Finds in itself a theme to pore upon ;
And finds it miserable, or makes it so.”

To enable the mind, however, to form an accurate judgment of the probable consequences of Solitude, it is, perhaps, necessary to have seen instances both of its advantageous and detrimental effects. The consequences vary with the subject on which it operates ; and the same species of solitude which to one character would be injurious, will prove to another of the highest benefit

benefit and advantage. The same person, indeed, may, at different periods, as his disposition changes, experience, under similar circumstances of retirement, very different effects. Certain, however, it is, that an occasional retreat from the tumultuous intercourses of society, or a judicious and well-arranged retirement, cannot be prejudicial. To have pointed out the train of VIRTUES it is capable of producing, and to have been silent upon the black catalogue of VICES that may result from extreme seclusion, would have been the more pleasing task; but I have undertaken to draw the character of SOLITUDE impartially, and must therefore point out its possible defects.

MAN, in a state of solitary indolence and inactivity, sinks by degrees, like stagnant water, into impurity and corruption. The body suffers with the mind's decay. It is more fatal than excess of action. It is a malady that renders every hope of recovery vain and visionary. To sink from action into rest, is only indulging the common course of nature; but to rise from long-continued indolence to voluntary activity, is extremely difficult, and almost impracticable. A celebrated poet has finely described this class of unhappy beings in the following lines:

Then look'd, and saw a lazy lolling sort,
Unseen at church, at senate, or at court,

Of

Of ever listless loiterers, that attend
 No cause, no trust, no duty, and no friend.
 Thee too, my PARIDEL! she mark'd thee there,
 Stretch'd on the rack of a too easy chair,
 And heard thy everlasting yawn confess
 The pains and penalties of idleness.*

To preserve the proper strength both of the body and the mind, labour must be regularly and seasonably mingled with rest. Each of them require their suited exercises and relaxations. Philosophers who aim at the attainment of every superior excellency, do not indulge themselves in ease, and securely and indolently wait for the cruelties of fortune to attack them in their retirement,

* “When I lately retired,” says old MONTAIGNE, “to my own house, with a resolution to avoid all manner of concerns in business as much as possible, and to spend the small remainder of my life in privacy and peace, I fancied I could not give my mind more enjoyment, than to leave it at full liberty to entertain rest, and compose itself; which I also hoped that it might do the more easily thenceforward, as being by time become more settled and improved; but found that, on the contrary, like a horse broke loose, which runs away with greater speed than the rider would put him to, it gave birth to so many chimeras and fantastic monsters one upon the neck of another, without order and design, that, for the sake of surveying the folly and absurdity of them, I began to draw a catalogue of them, hoping, in time, to make my mind ashamed of itself.

————— *variam semper dant otia mentem.*

“————— E’en in the most retir’d states

“A thousand thoughts an *idle life* creates.”

tirement, but, for fear she should surprize them in the state of inexperienced and raw soldiers, undisciplined for the battle, they fall out to meet her, and put themselves into regular training, and even upon the proof of hardships. Those only who observe a proper interchange of exercise and rest, can expect to enjoy health of body or chearfulness of mind. It is the only means by which the economy of the human frame can be regularly preserved.

Gay hope is theirs by fancy fed,
Less pleasing when possess'd ;
The tear forgot as soon as shed,
The sunshine of the breast :
Theirs buxom health, of rosy hue ;
Wild wit, invention ever new,
And lively cheer of vigour born ;
The thoughtless day, the easy night,
The spirits pure, the slumbers light,
That fly the approach of morn.

He, therefore, who does not possess sufficient activity to keep the body and mind in proper exercise ; he who is unacquainted with the art of varying his amusements, of changing the subjects of his contemplation, and of finding within himself all the materials of enjoyment ; will soon feel Solitude not only burthensome, but insupportable. To such a character, Solitude will not only be disagreeable, but dangerous ; for the

moment the temporary passion which draws him from society has subsided, he will sink into languor and indifference ; and this temper is always unfavourable to moral sentiment. The world, perhaps, with all its disadvantages, is less likely to be injurious to such a man, than the calm and silent shades of unenjoyed retirement.

SOLITUDE also, particularly when carried to an extreme, is apt to render the character of the recluse rigid, austere, and inflexible, and, of course, unsuited to the enjoyments of society. The notions he contracts are as singular and abstracted as his situation ; he adheres to them with inflexible pertinacity ; his mind moves only in the accustomed track ; he cherishes his preconceived errors and prejudices with fond attachment, and despises those whose sentiments are contrary to his own. A promiscuous intercourse with society has the effect of rendering the mind docile, and his judgment of men and things correct ; for in the world every subject is closely examined, every question critically discussed ; and, while the spirit of controversy and opposition elicits truth, the mind is led into a train of rational investigation, and its powers strengthened and enlarged ; but the mind of the recluse being uninterruptedly confined to its own course of reasoning, and to the habit of viewing objects
on

on one side, it is unable to appreciate the respective weights which different arguments may deserve, or to judge, in doubtful cases, on which side truth is most likely to be found. A commixture of different opinions on any particular subject, provokes a free and liberal discussion of it, an advantage which the prepossessions engendered by Solitude uniformly prevent.

SOLITUDE, while it establishes a dangerous confidence in the powers and opinions of its votaries, not only fastens on the characters, the errors and imperfections it has produced and fostered, but recommends them strongly to their esteem. How frequently do we observe, even in persons of rank and fortune, who reside continually on their own estates, a haughty manner, and arbitrary disposition, totally incompatible with that candid conduct, that open-minded behaviour, that condescending urbanity, that free spirit, which mark the character of the polite and liberal-minded gentleman, and renders him the veneration and delight of all around him ! “Obstinacy and pride,” says PLATO, “are the inevitable consequences of a solitary life ;” and the frequency of the facts certainly justifies the observation. Retired, secluded characters, having no opportunity of encountering the opinions of others, or of listening to any other judgment than

than their own, establish a species of tyranny over their understandings, and check that free excursion of the intellect, which the discovery of TRUTH requires. They reject with disdain the close investigations of logic, and repel all attempts to examine their arguments, and expose their fallacies. Their pre-conceived opinions, which they dignify with the appellation of settled truths, and mistake for indisputable axioms, have infixed themselves so deeply in their minds, that they cannot endure the idea of their being rooted out or removed ; and they are fearful of submitting them to the test of controversy, only because they were originally received without due examination, and have been confirmed by the implicit consent and approbation of their inferiors and dependents.*

SOLITUDE

* “ The man of study,” says a celebrated writer, “ when he meets with an opinion that pleases him, catches it up with eagerness ; looks only after such arguments as tend to its confirmation ; or spares himself the trouble of discussion, and adopts it with very little proof ; indulges it long without suspicion, in time unites it to the general body of his knowledge, and treasures it up among incontestible truths : but when he comes into the world among men who, arguing upon dissimilar principles, have been led to different conclusions, and being placed in various situations, view the same object on many sides, he finds his darling position attacked, and himself in no condition to defend it. Having thought always in one train, he is in the state of a man who, having fenced always with the same master, is perplexed

SOLITUDE also, even that Solitude which poets and philosophers have so feelingly described as blissful and beneficial, has frequently proved injurious to its delighted votaries. Men of letters are in general too inattentive to those easy and captivating manners, which give such high spirit to the address, and splendid decoration to the characters, of well-bred men. They seldom qualify the awkwardness of scholastic habits by a free and intimate intercourse either with the world or with each other; but being secluded from society, and engaged in abstracted pursuits, adopt a pedantic phraseology, an unaccommodating address, formal notions, and a partial attachment to their recondite pursuits. The common topics of conversation, and usual entertainments of company, they treat with high, but unjustifiable, disdain; and, blinded by fogs of pride and ideal superiority, are rendered incapable of discerning their errors.

The correction of this disposition in authors, has been thought of so much importance to the interests

plexed and amazed by a new posture of his antagonist: he is entangled in unexpected difficulties, he is harassed by sudden objections, he is unprovided with solutions or replies, his surprise impedes his natural powers of reasoning, his thoughts are scattered and confounded, and he gratifies the pride of airy petulance with an easy victory."

interests of morals, and to the manners of the rising generation, that scholars in general have been exhorted, in the highest strains of eloquence, by one of the most powerful preachers of GERMANY, from the pulpit of the politest city in the empire, to guard with unceasing vigilance against those defects, which are so apt to mingle with the habits of their profession, and which tend to sully the brightness of their characters. The orator invokes them to shake off that distant demeanour, that unsocial reserve, that supercilious behaviour, and almost express contempt, from which few of them are free, and which most of them practise when in unlettered company ; and to treat their fellow-citizens, however inferior they may be in erudition and scholastic knowledge, with affability and attention ; to listen to their conversation with politeness ; to regard their errors with lenity ; to view their failings with compassion, and their defects with liberality ; to lead them into the paths of truth and science by mild persuasion, to lure them to knowledge by gentle means ; and, by reducing their conversation and subjects of discourse to a level with the unlettered understandings of their auditors, to please the heart while they instruct the mind.

Good sense and learning may esteem obtain ;
Humour and wit a laugh, if rightly ta'en :

Fair

Fair Virtue admiration may impart ;
But 'tis GOOD-NATURE only wins the heart :
It moulds the body to an easy grace,
And brightens every feature of the face :
It smoothes the unpolish'd tongue with eloquence,
And adds persuasion to the finest sense.

Learning and good sense, indeed, to whatever degree they may be possessed, can only render the possessor happy in proportion as he employs them to increase the happiness of others. To effect this, he must occasionally endure the jokes of dulness without petulance, and listen with complacency to the observations of ignorance ; but, above all, he must carefully avoid all inclination to exhibit his own superiority, and to shine at the expence of others.

Would you both please, and be instructed too,
Watch well the rage of shining to subdue ;
Hear every man upon his favourite theme,
And ever be more knowing than you seem :
The lowest genius will afford some light,
Or give a hint that had escap'd your sight.
Doubt 'till he thinks you on conviction yield,
And with fit questions let each pause be fill'd ;
And the most knowing will with pleasure grant,
You're rather much reserv'd than ignorant.
Would you be well receiv'd where'er you go,
Remember each man vanquish'd is a foe.
Resist not, therefore, with your utmost might,
But let the weakest think he's sometimes right.

He,

He, for each triumph you shall thus decline,
Shall give ten opportunities to shine :
He sees, since once you own'd him to excel,
That 'tis his interest you should reason well.

LEARNING and WISDOM, indeed, however they may be confounded by arrogant and self-conceited scholars, are in no respect synonymous terms ; but, on the contrary, are not unfrequently quite at variance with each other. The high admiration which scholars are too apt to entertain of the excellency of their own talents, and the vast importance they generally ascribe to their own characters and merit, instead of producing that sound judgment upon men and things which constitutes true wisdom, only engenders an effervescence in the imagination, the effect of which is in general the most frothy folly. Many of those who thus pride themselves on the pursuits of literature, have nothing to boast of, but an indefatigable attention to some idle and unprofitable study ; a study which, perhaps, only tends to contract the feelings of the heart, and impoverish the powers of the mind. True wisdom, and genuine virtue, are the produce of those enlarged views which arise from a general and comprehensive knowledge both of books and men : but scholars, who confine their attention entirely to books, and feel no interest or concern for the world, despise every object that does not lie within

2

in

in the range of their respective studies. By poring over obsolete works, they acquire sentiments quite foreign to the manners of the age in which they live; form opinions as ridiculous as they are unfashionable; fabricate systems incomprehensible to the rest of mankind; and maintain arguments so offensive and absurd, that whenever they venture to display their acquirements in society, they are, like the bird of night, hooted back with derision into their daily obscurity. Many studious characters are so puffed up by arrogance, presumption, self-conceit, and vanity, that they can scarcely speak upon any subject without hurting the feelings of their friends, and giving cause of triumph to their enemies. The counsel and instruction they affect to give, is so mixed with ostentatious pedantry, that they destroy the very end they wish to promote; and, instead of acquiring honourable approbation, cover themselves with merited disgrace. PLATO, the illustrious chief of the Academic sect of Athenian philosophers, was so totally free from this vice of inferior minds, that it was impossible to discover in him, by ordinary and casual conversation, that sublime imagination, and almost divine intellect, which rendered him the idol of his age, and the admiration of succeeding generations. On his return from *Syracuse*, to which place he had been invited by DIONYSIUS the younger,

younger, he visited *Olympia*, to be present at the performance of the Olympic games ; and he was placed on the seat appropriated to foreigners of the highest distinction, but to whom he was not personally known. Some of them were so pleased with the ease, politeness, wisdom and vivacity of his conversation, that they accompanied him to *Athens*, and, on their arrival in that city, requested him to procure them an interview with PLATO. But how pleasing and satisfactory was their surprize, when, on his replying with a smile, “ *I am the person whom you wish to see,*” they discovered that this affable and entertaining companion, with whom they had travelled without discerning his excellency, was the most learned and profound philosopher at that time existing in the world ! The studious and retired life of this extraordinary character had not decreased his urbanity and politeness, nor deprived him of the exercise of those easy and seducing manners, which so entirely engage the affection and win the heart. He wisely prevented seclusion from robbing him of that amenity and unassuming ease so necessary to the enjoyment of society. Like those two eminent philosophers of the present day, the wise MENDELSON and the amiable GARVE, he derived from Solitude all the benefits it is capable of conferring, without suffering any

of those injuries which it too frequently inflicts on less powerful minds.

Culpable, however, as studious characters in general are, by neglecting to cultivate that social address, and to observe that civility of manners, and urbane attention, which an intercourse not only with the world, but even with private society, so indispenfibly requires, certain it is, that men of fashion expect from them a more refined good breeding, and a nicer attention to the forms of politeness, than all their endeavours can produce. The fashionable world, indeed, are blameable for their constant attempts to deride the awkwardness of their more erudite and abstracted companions. The severity with which they treat the defective manners of a scholastic visitor, is a violation of the first rules of true politeness, which consists entirely of a happy combination of good sense and good nature, both of which dictate a different conduct, and induce rather a friendly concealment than a triumphant exposure of such venial failings. The inexperienced scholastic is entitled to indulgence, for he cannot be expected nicely to practise customs which he has had no opportunity to learn. To the eye of polished life, his austerity, his reserve, his mistakes, his indecorums, may, perhaps, appear ridiculous; but to expose him to

5

derision

derision on this subject, is destructive to the general interests of society, inasmuch as it tends to repress and damp endeavours to please. How is it possible that men who devote the greater portion of their time to the solitary and abstracted pursuits of literature, can possess that promptitude of thought, that vivacity of expression, those easy manners, and that varying humour, which prevail so agreeably in mixed society, and which can only be acquired by a constant intercourse with the world? It was not only cruel, but unjust, of the Swedish courtiers, to divert themselves with the confusion and embarrassments into which MIEBOM and NAUDE, two celebrated writers on the *Music* and *Dances* of the ancients, were thrown, when the celebrated CHRISTINA desired the one to sing and the other to dance in public, for the entertainment of the court. Still less excusable were those imps of fashion in *France*, who exposed the celebrated mathematician NICOLE to the derision of a large company for the misapplication of a word. A fashionable female at *Paris* having heard that NICOLE, who had then lately written a profound and highly approved treatise on the doctrine of curves, was greatly celebrated in all the circles of science, and affecting to be thought the patronness and intimate of all persons of distinguished merit, sent him such an invitation to one of her parties, that

he could not refuse to accept of. The abstracted geometrician, who had never before been present at an assembly of the kind, received the civilities of his fair hostess, and her illustrious friends, with all the awkwardness and confusion which such a scene must naturally create. After passing an uncomfortable evening in answering the observations of those who addressed him, in which he experienced much greater difficulties than he would have found in solving the most intricate problem, he prepared to take his leave, and pouring out a profusion of declarations to the lady of the house, of the grateful sense he entertained of the high honour she had conferred on him by her generous invitation, distinguishing attention, polite regard, and extraordinary civility, rose to the climax of his compliments, by assuring her, that the *lovely little eyes of his fair entertainer had made an impression which could be never erased from his breast*, and immediately departed. But a kind friend, who was accompanying him home, whispered in his ear, as they were passing to the stairs, that he had paid the lady a very ill compliment, by telling her that her eyes were little, for that little eyes were universally understood by the whole sex to be a great defect. NICOLE, mortified to an extreme by the mistake he had thus innocently made, and resolving to apologize to the lady, whom

whom he conceived he had offended, returned abruptly to the company, and entreated her, with great humility, to pardon the error into which his confusion had betrayed him, of imputing any thing like *littleness* to so high, so elegant, so distinguished a character, declaring, that he had never beheld *such fine large eyes, such fine large lips, such fine large hands, or so fine and large a person altogether*, in the whole course of his life.

The professional pursuits of students confine them, during the early periods of life, to retirement and seclusion, and prevent them, in general, from attempting to mix in the society of the world, until age or professional habits have rendered them unfit for this scene. Discouraged by the neglect they experience, and by the ridicule to which they are exposed, on their first introduction into active life, from persevering in their attempts to shake off the uncouth manner they have acquired, they immediately shrink from the displeasing prospect into their original obscurity, in despair of ever attaining the talents necessary to render them agreeable to the elegant and gay. There are, indeed, some men, who, on attempting to change the calm and rational enjoyments of a retired and studious life, for the more lively and loquacious pleasures of public society, perceive the manners and maxims of the

G 3

world

world so repugnant to their principles, and so disagreeable to their taste and inclinations, that they instantly abandon society, and, renouncing all future attempts to enter into its vortex, calmly and contentedly return to their beloved retreat, under an idea that it is wrong for persons of such different dispositions to intermix or invade the provinces of each other. There are also many studious characters who avoid society under an idea, that they have transferred their whole minds into their own compositions; that they have exhausted all that they possessed of either instruction or entertainment; and that they would, like empty bottles, or squeezed oranges, be thrown aside with disregard, and, perhaps, with contempt, as persons no longer capable of contributing to companionable pleasures. But there are others, of sounder sense, and better judgment, who gladly relinquish the noisy assemblies of public life, and joyfully retire to the sweet and tranquil scenes of rural Solitude, because they seldom meet, among the candidates for public approbation, a single individual capable of enjoying a just thought, or making a rational reflection; but, on the contrary, have to encounter a host of vain and frivolous pretenders to wit and learning, who herd together like the anarchs of insurrection, to oppose, with noise and violence, the progress of truth and the exertions of reason.

Sentiments

Sentiments like these too frequently banish from the circles of society, characters of useful knowledge and of distinguished genius, and from whose endowments mankind might receive both instruction and delight. The loss in such a case to the individual is, perhaps, trifling; his comforts may possibly be encreased by his seclusion; but the interests of truth and good sense are thereby considerably injured: for the mind of man, however powerful and informed it may be in itself, cannot employ its energies and acquisitions with the same advantage and effect, as when it is whetted by a collision with other minds, and polished by the manners of the world. An acquaintance with the living characters and manners of the world, teaches the mind to direct its powers to their proper and most useful points; exhibits the means, and furnishes the instruments, by which the best exertions of virtue can attain her ends; gives morals their brightest colour, taste its highest refinement, and truth its fairest objects. The wisest and best philosophers have acknowledged the obligations they were under to society, for the knowledge they acquired in its extensive though dangerous school, and have strongly recommended the study of mankind, by viewing all the various classes with a discriminating eye, as the best means of becoming acquainted with the beauties of *Virtue* and the deformities of *Vice*,

and, of course, as the best means of discovering the true road to earthly happiness ; for

VIRTUE, immortal Virtue ! born to please,
The child of nature, and the source of ease,
Bids every bliss on human life attend ;
To every rank a kind and faithful friend ;
Inspires nature 'midst the scenes of toil,
Smooths langour's cheek, and bids fell want recoil ;
Shines from the mitre with unsullied rays,
Glares on the crest, and gives the star to blaze ;
Supports distinction, spreads ambition's wings,
Forms saints of queens, and demi-gods of kings ;
O'er grief, oppression, envy, scorn, prevails,
And makes a cottage greater than Versailles.

A free, open, unconstrained intercourse with mankind, has also the advantages of reconciling us to the peculiarities of others, and of teaching us the important lesson how to accommodate our minds and manners to such principles, opinions, and dispositions, as may differ from our own. The learned and enlightened cannot maintain an intercourse with the illiterate, without exercising an extraordinary degree of patience, conceding many points which appear unnatural, and forbearing to feel those little vexations so adherent to characters who have lived in retirement. The philosopher, in order to teach virtue to the world with any hope of success, must humour its vices to a certain degree, and sometimes even adopt the

the follies he intends to destroy. To inculcate wisdom, it is necessary to follow the examples of SOCRATES and WIELAND, and separating from morals all that is harsh, repulsive, and anti-social, adopt only the kind and complacent tenets of the science. A German author of the present day, whom I glory to call both my countryman and my friend, observes, with the sagacity and discrimination of a true critic, in his "*Remarks on the Writings and Genius of Franklin*," that the compositions of that great and extraordinary character, are totally free from that pomp of style, and parade of erudition, which so frequently disfigure the writings of other authors, and defeat their intended effect. The pen of FRANKLIN renders the most abstract principles easy and familiar. He conveys his instructions in pleasing narrations, lively adventures, or humorous observations; and while his manner wins upon the heart, by the friendly interest he appears to take in the concerns of mankind, his matter instils into the mind the soundest principles of morals and good policy. He makes Fancy the handmaid to Reason in her researches into science, and penetrates the understanding through the medium of the affections. A secret charm pervades every part of his works. He rivets the attention by the strength of his observations, and relieves it by the variety of pleasing images with which he

embellishes his subject. The perspicuity of his style, and the equally easy and eloquent turn of his periods, give life and energy to his thoughts; and while the reader feels his heart bounding with delight, he finds his mind impregnated with instruction. These high advantages resulted entirely from his having studied the world, and gained an accurate knowledge of mankind. An author, indeed, may acquire an extraordinary fund of knowledge in Solitude; but it is in Society alone that he can learn how to render it useful. Before he can instruct the world, he must be enabled to view its fooleries and vices with calm inspection; to contemplate them without anger, as the unavoidable consequences of human infirmity; to treat them with tenderness; and to avoid exasperating the feelings of those whose depravity he is attempting to correct. A moral censor, whose disposition is kind and benevolent, never suffers his superior virtue, knowledge, or talents, however great they may be, to offend the feelings of others; but, like SOCRATES, he will appear as if he were receiving himself the instruction he is imparting. It is a fine observation of the celebrated GOETHE, that kindness is the golden chain by which society is bound together: those who have had the happiness to converse with that extraordinary man, must have perceived the anxiety with which he

he endeavours to temper the strength of his genius by the mildness and amenity of his conversation.

Men of letters, however awkward the habits of seclusion may have rendered them, would, I am convinced, be in general, if not always, treated with great politeness and attention, if they would be careful to treat others with the common candour which humanity requires, and with that indulgence and affability which true liberality of sentiment will ever dictate: But how few, alas! are there, who, by complacency and condescension, entitle themselves to the kindness and civility of which they stand so much in need, and so arrogantly expect! How is it possible for those who are vigilantly anxious to depress the rising merit of others, ever to gain their friendship or esteem? Friendship can only be acquired by an open, sincere, liberal, and manly conduct: but he whose breast is filled with envy and jealousy, who cautiously examines before he speaks, every sentiment and feeling, lest his tongue should betray the meanness of his heart, and the poverty of his mind; who seizes every light indiscretion, or trifling error, that may inadvertently escape from his companions; who silently repines at every excellency, both moral and intellectual, which they may discover; who, even when surrounded

G 6

rounded by those who wish him well, continues with guarded circumspection, and suspicious caution, to weigh the motives of their actions and conversation, as if he were surrounded by the bitterest enemies, must be utterly incapable of esteeming others, or being esteemed himself; and to suppose that the generous flame of friendship, that holy fire, which, under the deepest adversity, so comfortably warms and cheers the heart, can ever spring up from such cold materials, and ashy embers, would be extravagant and ridiculous.

The delight which the heart experiences in pouring forth the fulness of its feelings, with honest confidence, into the bosom of a faithful friend, is permanent and unbounded. The pleasures which spring from the acquisition of fame, whether resulting from the generous voice of an approving public, or extorted from the reluctant tongues of envious rivals and contemporaries, will bear no comparison with those which thrill through the exulting bosom of him who can justly exclaim, “To the heart of this unhappy man I have given returning hopes, and made him look forward with confidence to the enjoyment of peace; to this wounded spirit I have imparted the balm of comfort and tranquillity; and from the bleeding bosom of my friend have driven despair!”

spair!" But to perform such offices as these, it is indispensibly necessary that we should have recommended ourselves to the confidence, and have gained the affections, of those we intend to serve. This great and necessary property, however, those who live secluded lives very seldom possess: but, much as they may, in general, disdain to practise this high virtue, it is necessary that they should know that it tends more to ennoble the sentiments of the mind, and to raise the feelings of the heart, than their most successful researches to discover something before unheard of in the regions of science, and which they pursue with as much avidity, as if TRUTH were liable to decay, unless sustained by the aid of novelty.

It is justly and beautifully said by one of the apocryphal writers, that *A faithful friend is the medicine of life*. A variety of occasions happen, when, to pour forth the heart to one whom we love and trust, is the chief comfort, perhaps the only relief, we can enjoy. Miserable is he who, shut up within the narrow inclosure of selfish interest, has no person to whom he can at all times, with full confidence, expand his soul. But he who can only feel an affection for such as listen continually to the suggestions of vanity, as applaud indiscriminately the imaginary prodigies of his wit, or never contradict the egotism of his opinions,

opinions, is totally unfit for friendship, and utterly unworthy of respect. It is men of learning, and of retired habits, who are most likely to adopt this disengaging disposition. There are, I am sorry to say it, many men, distinguished in the paths of science, who affect to possess the most refined sensibility, and whose tongues are continually proclaiming the virtues of benevolence, but who, when they are called upon to practise those virtues in behalf of some distressed companion, turn a deaf ear to the appeal, form some poor excuse for not interfering, and, if pressed to come forward with some promised assistance, deny to afford it, because the unhappy sufferer has neglected to approve of some extravagant conjecture, or to adopt all the visionary notions, and Utopian systems, they may have framed. He who neglects to perform the common charities of life, because his idle vanity may have been offended by the neglect or indifference of his companions, will never find, and cannot become, a real friend. There are also an inferior order of fops in literature, (if any order can be inferior to that which I have last described,) who carry with them, wherever they go, a collection of their latest compositions, and, by importunately reading them to every one they meet, and expecting an unreserved approbation of their merits, render themselves so unpleasantly troublesome.

troublesome on all occasions, that, instead of conciliating the least regard or esteem, their very approach is dreaded as much as a pestilence or a famine. Every man of real genius will shun this false ambition of gratifying vanity by forced applause, because he will immediately perceive, that, instead of gaining the hearts of his auditors, he only exposes himself to their ridicule, and loses all chance of their esteem.

The disadvantages, however, which studious characters have been described to experience from habits of solitary seclusion, and by neglecting the manners of society, must not be indiscriminately applied. It is the morose and surly pedant, who sits silently in his solitary study, and endeavours to enforce a character for genius in opposition to nature, who adopts the mean and unworthy arts of jealousy, suspicion, and dishonest praise. Far different the calm, happy and honourable life of him, who, devoted to the cultivation of a strong understanding, and the improvement of a feeling heart, is enabled, by his application and genius, to direct the taste of the age by his liberality of spirit, to look on his equals without jealousy, and his superiors with admiration; and, by his benevolence, to feel for the multitude he instructs, indulgence and affection; who, relying on the real greatness of his character, makes no attempt

attempt to increase his importance by low raillery or unfounded satire ; whose firm temper never sinks into supine indolence, or grovelling melancholy ; who only considers his profession as the means of ameliorating mankind ; who perseveres in the cause of truth with cheerful rectitude and virtuous dignity ; whose intellectual resources satisfactorily supply the absence of society ; whose capacious mind enables him to increase his stores of useful knowledge ; whose discriminating powers enable him to elucidate the subject he explores ; who feels as great a delight in promoting the beneficial discoveries of others as in executing his own ; and who regards his professional contemporaries, not as jealous rivals, but as generous friends, striving to emulate each other in the noble pursuits of science, and in the laudable task of endeavouring to improve the morals of mankind.

Characters of this description, equally venerable and happy, are numerous in Europe, both within and without the shades of academic bowers, and afford examples which, notwithstanding the tribe of errors and absurdities Solitude occasionally engenders, should induce men of worldly pleasures to repress the antipathies they are in general inclined to feel against persons of studious and retired lives.

CHAPTER THE FOURTH.

THE INFLUENCE OF SOLITUDE ON THE
IMAGINATION.

THE powers of imagination are great ; and the effects produced by them, under certain circumstances, upon the minds of men of warm and sensible tempers, extraordinary and surprising. Multitudes have been induced, by perturbed imaginations, to abandon the gay and cheerful haunts of men, and to seek in dreary desolation, comfort and repose. To such extremes has this faculty, when distorted, hurried its unhappy subjects, that they have endured the severest mortification, denied themselves the common benefits of nature, exposed themselves to the keenest edge of winter's cold, and the most scorching rays of summer's heat, and indulged their distempered fancies in the wildest chimeras. These dreadful effects appear, on a first view, to be owing to some supernatural cause, and they agitate our senses, and confuse the understanding, as phenomena beyond the comprehension of reason : but the wonder vanishes when the cause is coolly and carefully explored ; and the extravagancies are traced up to their real source, the natural organization

nization of man. The wild ideas of the hermit ANTHONY,* who, in his gloomy retreat, fancied that BEELZEBUB appeared to him in the form of a beautiful female, to torture his senses, and disturb

* ST. ANTHONY was born in Egypt in the year 252, and inherited a large fortune, which he distributed among his neighbours and the poor; retired into Solitude; founded a religious order; built many monasteries; and died in the year 356. Many ridiculous stories are told of his conflicts with the devil, and of his miracles. There are seven epistles extant attributed to him. He is sometimes represented with a fire by his side, to signify that he relieved persons from the inflammation called after his name; but is always accompanied by a Hog, on account of his having been a swineherd, and curing all disorders in that animal. To do him the greater honour, the Romanists, in several places, keep, at common charges, a hog, denominated *St. Anthony's Hog*, for which they have great veneration. Some will have St. Anthony's picture on the walls of their houses, hoping by that to be preserved from the plague: and the Italians, who do not know the true signification of the fire painted at the side of their saint, conclude that he preserves their houses from conflagration. Both painters and poets have made very free with this saint and his followers: the former, by the many ludicrous pictures of his temptation; and the latter, by divers epigrams on his disciples or friars, one of which is the following, printed in STEPHENS'S *World of Wonders*.

“ Once fed thou, ANTHONY, a herd of swine,
And now a herd of monks thou feedest still.
For wit and gut alike they both ha' been :
Both loved filth alike; both like to fill
Their greedy punch alike : nor was that kind
More beastly, sottish, swinish, than this last.
All else agrees : one fault I only find,
Thou feedest not thy monks with oaken mast.”

turb his repose, originated in his natural character and disposition. His distempered fancy conjured up a fiend, which, in fact, existed in his unsubdued passions and incontinent desires.

From the enchanting cup
Which FANCY holds to all, the unwary thirst
Of youth oft swallows a Circæan draught,
That sheds a baleful tincture o'er the eye
Of Reason, till no longer he discerns,
And only lives to err : then revel forth
A furious band, that spurn him from the throne,
And all is uproar. Hence the fever'd heart
Pants with delirious hope for tinsel charms.*

SOLITUDE excites and strengthens the powers
of the imagination to an uncommon degree, and
thereby

* “ There are,” says LORD SHAFTSBURY, “ certain humours in mankind, which of necessity must have vent. The human mind and body are both of them naturally subject to commotions; and as there are strange ferments in the blood, which in many bodies occasion an extraordinary discharge, so in Reason too there are heterogeneous particles, which must be thrown off by fermentation. Should physicians endeavour absolutely to ally those ferments of the body, and strike in the humours which discover themselves in such eruptions, they might, instead of making a cure, bid fair, perhaps, to raise a plague, and turn a spring ague, or an autumn surfeit, into an epidemical malignant fever. They are certainly as ill physicians of the body politic, who would need be tampering with these mental eruptions, and, under the specious pretence of healing this itch of SUPERSTITION, and saving souls from the contagion of ENTHUSIASM, should set all nature in an uproar, and turn a few innocent carbuncles into an inflammation and mortal gangrene.”

thereby enfeebles the effect of the controlling powers of Reason. The office of the latter faculty of the mind, is to examine, with nice discernment and scrupulous attention, to compare the several properties of thoughts and things with each other, and to acquire, by cool and deliberate investigation, correct ideas of their combinations and effects. The exercise of this power suspends the vehemence of action, and abates the ardour of desire : but Fancy performs her airy excursions upon light and vagrant wings, and flying round her objects without examination, embraces every pleasing image with encreasing delight. Judgment separates and associates the ideas the mind has gained by sensation and reflection, and by determining their agreement or disagreement, searches after truth through the medium of probability ; but the imagination employs itself in raising unsubstantial images, and portraying the form of things unknown in nature, and foreign to truth. It has, indeed, like memory, the power of reviving in the mind, the ideas which, after having been imprinted there, have disappeared ; but it differs from that faculty, by altering, enlarging, diversifying, and frequently distorting, the subjects of its power.

It bodies forth the form of things unknown,
And gives to airy nothings
A local habitation and a name.

But

But the irregular and wild desires which seize upon the mind through the avenues of an untamed fancy, and disordered imagination, are not exclusively the produce of Solitude. The choice of WISDOM or FOLLY is offered to us in all places, and under every circumstance; but the mind of man is unhappily prone to that which is least worthy of it. I shall, therefore, endeavour to shew, by some general observations, in what instances Solitude is most likely to create those flights of imagination, which mislead the mind, and corrupt the heart.

Imagination is said to be the simple apprehension of corporeal objects when they are absent, which absence of the object it contemplates distinguishes this faculty from *sensation*, and has occasioned some metaphysicians to call it *recorded sensation*.* Upon the due regulation, and proper management,

* The influence of the imagination on the conduct of life, is said to be one of the most important points in moral philosophy. It were easy, by an induction of facts, to prove that the imagination directs almost all the passions, and mixes with almost every circumstance of action or pleasure. Let any man, even of the coldest head, and soberest industry, analyse the idea of what he calls his interest; he will find that it consists chiefly of certain degrees of decency, beauty, and order, variously combined into one system, the idol of which he seeks to enjoy by labour, hazard, and self-denial. It is, on this account, of the
last

management, of this great and extraordinary power of the mind, depends, in a great measure, the happiness or misery of life. It ought to consist of a happy combination of those ideas we receive through the organs of bodily sense, and those which we derive from the faculties of moral perception; but it too frequently consists of a capricious and ill-formed mixture of heterogeneous images, which, though true in themselves, are false in the way they are applied. Thus a person, the circulation of whose blood in any particular member is suddenly stopped, *imagines* that needles are pricking the disordered part. The sensation in this case is real, but the conclusion from it is fallacious. So in every mental illusion, Imagination, when she first begins to exercise her powers, seizes on some fact, of the real nature of which the mind has but an obscure idea, and, for want of tracing it through all its connections and dependencies, misleads Reason into the darkest paths of error. The wild conjectures, and extravagant opinions, which have issued from this source are innumerable. Imagination

last consequence to regulate those images by the standard of nature, and the general good; otherwise the imagination, by heightening some objects beyond their real excellence and beauty, or by representing others in a more odious or terrible shape than they deserve, may of course engage the mind in pursuits utterly inconsistent with the moral order of things.

gination receives every impulse with eagerness, while the Passions crowd around her splendid throne obedient to her dictates. They act, indeed, reciprocally on each other. The imagination pours a concourse of contrary ideas into the mind, and easily disregards or reconciles their incongruities. The voice of the calm enquirer Reason, is incapable of being heard amidst the tumult; and the favourite images is animated and enlarged by the glowing fire of the passions. No power remains to controul or regulate, much less to subdue, this mental ray, which inflames the whole soul, and exalts it into the fervour of ENTHUSIASM; hurries it into the extravagance of SUPERSTITION; or precipitates it into the furious frenzies of FANATICISM.

The powerful tumult reigns in every part,
Pants in the breast, and swells the rising heart.

ENTHUSIASM is that extacy of the mind, that lively transport of the soul, which is excited by the pursuit or contemplation of some great and noble object, the novelty of which awakens attention, the truth of which fixes the understanding, and the grandeur of which, by firing the fancy, engages the aid of every passion, and prompts the mind to the highest undertakings. A just and rightly formed enthusiasm is founded in reason, and supported by nature, and carries the mind
above

above its ordinary level, into the unexplored regions of art and science. The rational enthusiast, indeed, rises to an elevation so far above the distinct view of vulgar eyes, that common understandings are apt to treat him either with blind admiration, or cool contempt, only because they are incapable of comprehending his real character; and while some bow to him as an extraordinary genius, others rail at him as an unhappy lunatic. The powers of enthusiasm, however, when founded upon proper principles, so strengthen and invigorate the faculties of the mind, as to enable it to resist danger undismayed, and to surmount difficulties that appear irresistible. Those, indeed, who have possessed themselves of this power to any extraordinary degree, have been considered as *inspired*, and their great achievements conceived to have been directed by councils, and sustained by energies, of a divine or super-mundane nature. Certain it is, that we owe to the spirit of enthusiasm, whatever is great in art, sublime in science, or noble in the human character: and the elegant and philosophic LORD SHAFTSBURY, while he ridicules the absurdities of this wonderfully powerful and extensive quality, admits that it is impossible to forbear ascribing to it whatever is greatly performed by heroes, statesmen, poets, orators, and even philosophers themselves: and who, that is not contented to wallow in the mire

of gross sensuality, would not quit the noisy scenes of tumultuous dissipation, and repair with joy and gladness to solitary shades, to the bower of tranquillity, and the fountain of peace, to majestic forests, and to verdant groves, to acquire this necessary ingredient to perfect excellence? Who would not willingly pierce the pensive gloom, or dwell among the brighter glories of the golden age, to acquire, by a warm and glowing, but correct and chaste, contemplation of the beautiful and sublime works of nature, these ravishing sensations, and gain this noble fervor of the imagination? A proper study of the works of nature, amidst the romantic scenery of sylvan Solitude, is certainly the most likely means of inspiring the mind with true enthusiasm, and leading Genius to her most exalted heights; but the attempt is dangerous. There are few men in whose minds airy notions do not sometimes tyrannize. “To indulge the power of fiction,” says a celebrated writer, “and send imagination out upon the wing, is often the sport of those who delight too much in silent speculation. When we are alone, we are not always busy; the labour of excogitation is too violent to last long; the ardour of enquiry will sometimes give way to idleness or satiety. He who has nothing external that can divert him, must find pleasure in his own thoughts, and must conceive

himself what he is not ; for who is pleased with what he is ? He then expatiates in boundless futurity, and culls from all imaginable conditions, that which for the present moment he should most desire, amuses his desires with impossible enjoyments, and confers upon his pride unattainable dominion. The mind dances from scene to scene, unites all pleasures in all combinations, riots in delights which nature and fortune, with all their bounty, cannot bestow. In time some particular train of ideas fixes the attention ; all other intellectual gratifications are rejected ; the mind, in weariness or leisure, recurs constantly to the favourite conception, and feasts on the luscious falsehood, whenever she is offended with the bitterness of truth. By degrees the reign of fancy is confirmed ; she grows first imperious, and in time despotic : then fictions begin to operate as realities, false opinions fasten on the mind, and life passes in dreams of rapture or of anguish. This is one of the dangers of Solitude.

These observations bring us to consider the character of the fanatical visionary, who feels, like the happy enthusiast, the same agitation of passions, and the same inflammation of mind ; but as the feelings of the one are founded upon knowledge, truth, and nature, so the feelings of the other are the result of ignorance and error ; and all the
glittering

glittering meteors of his brain, the effects of imposture and deception. Of this species of *Enthusiasm*, Mr. LOCKE gives the following description: "In all ages, men in whom melancholy has mixed with devotion, or whose conceit of themselves has raised them into an opinion of a greater familiarity with God, and a nearer admittance to his favours, than is afforded to others, have often flattered themselves with a persuasion of an immediate intercourse with the Deity, and frequent communication with his divine spirit. Their minds being thus prepared, whatever groundless opinion comes to settle itself strongly upon their fancies, is an illumination from the Spirit of God; and whatever odd action they find in themselves a strong inclination to do, that impulse is concluded to be A CALL or direction from Heaven, and must be obeyed: It is a commission from above, and they cannot err in executing it. This species of enthusiasm, though arising from the conceit of a warm and overweening brain, works, when it once gets footing, more powerfully on the persuasions and actions of men, than either reason or revelation, or both together; men being forwardly obedient to all the impulses they receive from themselves." The fantastic images, indeed, which the wildness of his imagination creates, subdues his reason, and destroys the best

affections of his heart; while his passions take the part of their furious assailants, and render him the victim of his visionary conceptions. It is not, however, from sources of fanatical devotion, or irrational solitude, that this vicious species of enthusiasm alone arises. The follies of *Faquirs*, the extravagance of *Orgaists*, the absurdities of *Hermits*, and the mummary of *Monks*, are not more enthusiastically injurious to the true interests of mankind, or more pregnant with all the calamitous effects of this baleful vice, than those unprincipled systems of politics and morals which have been of late years obtruded on the world, and in which good sense is sacrificed, and true science disgraced.

The growth of Fanaticism, whether moral, political, religious, or scientific, is not confined exclusively to any age or country; the seeds of it have been but too plentifully sown in all the regions of the earth; and it is almost equally baneful and injurious in whatever soil they spring. Every bold, turbulent and intriguing spirit, who has sufficient artifice to inflame the passions of the inconstant multitude, the moment he calls the demon of Fanaticism to his aid, becomes troublesome, and frequently dangerous, to the government under which he lives. Even the affectation of this powerful, but pernicious, quality,

lity, is able to produce fermentations highly detrimental to the peace of society. In the very metropolis of Great Britain, and among the enlightened inhabitants of that kingdom, LORD GEORGE GORDON, in the present age, was enabled, by assuming the hypocritical appearances of piety, and standing forth as the champion of a religious sect, to convulse the nation, and endanger its safety. In the twenty-first year of the reign of his Britannic Majesty, the present powerful and illustrious KING GEORGE THE THIRD, an act of parliament was passed to relieve the Roman Catholics residing in *England*, from the penalties and disabilities which had been imposed on them at the Revolution. An extension of the same relief to the Catholics of *Scotland* was also said to be intended by parliament. The report spread an immediate alarm throughout the country; societies were formed for the defence of the *Protestant faith*; committees appointed, books dispersed, and, in short, every method taken to inflame the zeal of the people. These attempts being totally neglected by government, and but feebly resisted by the more liberal minded in that country, produced all their effects. A furious spirit of bigotry and persecution soon shewed itself, and broke out into the most outrageous acts of violence against the Papists at *Edinburgh, Glasgow*, and elsewhere; and as

government did not think it advisable to repress this spirit by force, the just and benevolent intentions of the legislature were laid aside. The successful resistance of the zealots in *Scotland* to any relaxation of the penal laws against Papists, seems to have given the first rise to the THE PROTESTANT ASSOCIATION in *England*; for about the same time bills were dispersed, and advertisements inserted in the newspapers, inviting those who wished well to THE CAUSE to unite under that title; and LORD GEORGE GORDON, who had been active at the head of the malecontents in *Scotland*, was chosen their president. The ferment was suffered to increase during a course of several years. His lordship was a member of the senate; and his extraordinary conduct in the house, the frequent interruption he gave to the business of parliament, as well as the unaccountable manner in which he continually brought in and treated matters relative to religion and the danger of Popery, and the caprice with which he divided the house upon questions wherein he stood nearly or entirely alone, were passed over, along with other singularities in his dress and manners, rather as subjects of pleasantries, than of serious notice or reprehension. On Monday, the 29th of May, 1780, a meeting was held at Coachmakers-Hall, pursuant to a public advertisement, in order to consider of the mode of presenting

presenting a petition to the House of Commons. LORD GEORGE GORDON took the chair ; and, after a long inflammatory harangue, in which he endeavoured to persuade his hearers of the rapid and alarming progress that Popery was making in the kingdom, he proceeded to observe, that the only way to stop it, was going in a firm, manly and resolute manner to the house, and shewing their representatives, that they were determined to preserve their religious freedom with their lives ; that, for his part, he would run all hazards with the people ; and if the people were too lukewarm to run all hazards with him, when their conscience and their country called them forth, they might get another president ; for that he would tell them candidly, he was not a lukewarm man himself ; and that, if they meant to spend their time in mock debate, and idle opposition, they might get another leader. This speech was received with the loudest applause ; and his lordship then moved the following resolution : “ That the whole Body of the Protestant Association do attend in *St. George’s Fields* on Friday next, at Ten o’Clock in the Morning, to accompany their President to the House of Commons at the delivery of the Protestant Petition ;” which was carried unanimously. His lordship then informed them, that if less than twenty thousand of his fellow-citizens

attended him on that day, he would not present their petition. Accordingly, on Friday, the 2d of June, 1780, at ten in the forenoon, several thousands assembled at the place appointed, marshalling themselves in ranks, and waiting for their leader, who arrived about an hour afterwards ; and they all proceeded to the Houses of Parliament. Here they began to exercise the most arbitrary power over both Lords and Commons, by obliging almost all the members to put blue cockades in their hats, and call out "*No Popery.*" Some they compelled to take oaths to vote for the repeal of this obnoxious act ; others they insulted in the most indecent and insolent manner. They took possession of all the avenues up to the very doors of both houses of parliament, which they twice attempted to force open, and committed many outrages on the persons of the members. Nor were they dispersed, or the remaining members able to leave their seats, until a military force arrived. The houses were adjourned to the 19th of June. But so dreadful a spectacle of calamity and horror was never known in any age or country, as that which the metropolis of England exhibited on the evening and the day which succeeded this seditious congregation. These astonishing effects, produced by the real or pretended fanaticism of a single individual, sufficiently display the power of

of this dangerous quality, when artfully employed to inflame the passions of the unthinking multitude. But it is worthy observation, that while this incendiary sustained among his followers the character of a pious patriot, of a man without the smallest spot or blemish, of being, in short, the most virtuous guardian of the established religion of the country, he regularly indulged his holy fervors, and sanctified appearances, every evening, in the company of common prostitutes or professed wantons.*

H 5

The

* The members who were personally insulted during the riot which this arch hypocrite, or half madman, had raised, were the Archbishop of York, Lord Bathurst, the President of the Council, Lord Mansfield, Chief Justice of the King's Bench, the Duke of Northumberland, the Bishop of Litchfield, Lord Townsend, Lord Hillsborough, Lord Stormont, Lord Ashburnham, and Lord Boston. The multitude left the avenues of the Houses of Parliament soon after the arrival of the guards, but they still kept themselves assembled in detached parties; and though order and tranquillity were re-established in this part of the town, it was far otherwise elsewhere. On the evening of the 7th of June, 1780, London was, from one spot, beheld blazing in thirty-six different parts. Some of these conflagrations were of such a magnitude as to be truly tremendous. Of these the great Jail of Newgate, the King's Bench Prison, the New Bridewell in St. George's Fields, the Fleet Prison, and the houses and great distilleries of Mr. Langdale in Holborn, presented spectacles of the most dreadful nature. But the outrages grew far more violent and general; and an attack was even made on the Bank. The whole activity of Government, however,

The fire of fanaticism is, indeed, so subtly powerful, that it is capable of inflaming the coldest mind. The mildest and the most rational dispositions have been occasionally injured by its heat. The rapidity of its progress certainly depends, in a great degree, on the nature of the materials on which it acts; but, like every dangerous conflagration, its first appearances should be watched, and every means taken to extinguish its flames. The extinction is, perhaps, most happily and readily effected by those counteractions which the common occupations, and daily duties of life, produce on the mind, when judiciously opposed to this flagrant evil. Of the advantages, at least, of this resource, a circumstance in the history of the late DR. FOTHERGILL affords a remarkable example. This celebrated physician possessed the greatest tranquillity of mind; and had obtained so compleat a dominion over his passions, that he declared to a friend, recently before his death, that he could not recollect a single instance, during the whole course

however, was at length roused; the military were called out; and, after many lives had been lost, the insurrection was at length suppressed. On the ensuing day LORD GEORGE GORDON was taken into custody, and committed a prisoner to the Tower. He was afterwards indicted for *High Treason*, and acquitted. Many of the rioters were also apprehended, and tried under a special commission, and some of them were convicted and executed.

course of his life, in which they had been improperly disturbed. This temper, which was perfectly suited to the character of the religion he professed, the tenets of which he strictly practised, he maintained on all occasions; nor was there any thing in his general conduct or manner, that betrayed to his most familiar friends, the least propensity towards enthusiasm; and yet, distant as the suspicion must be, under these circumstances, that he should ever be under the influence of superstition, it is well known, that, while he was a student at *Edinburgh*, where he was distinguished for the mildness of his manners, and the regularity of his conduct, he one day, in an eccentric fally of fanaticism, ran, almost entirely naked, through the streets of that city, warning all its inhabitants of the impending wrath of heaven; and exhorting them, in the most solemn manner, to avert the approaching danger, by humbly imploring the mercy of an offended Deity. But this religious paroxysm was of short duration. He was at this time in habits of intimacy with the great characters who then filled the professional chairs of the university, and ardently engaged in the pursuits of study; and the exercises which his daily tasks required, together with the company and conversation of these rational, well-informed, and thinking men, preserved his reason, and soon

restored him to the full and free enjoyment of those faculties, from which both science and humanity afterwards derived so many benefits.*

The conduct of ST. FRANCIS, commonly called The *Holy Francis of Assisi*, was in some degree similar, excepting that the madness of this fanatic continued throughout his life, while the delirium of *Fothergill* lasted but a day. This saint was born at *Assisi*, in the province of *Umbria*, in the year 1182. His real name of baptism was *John*; but, on account of the facility with which he acquired the French language, so necessary at that time in Italy, especially for the business for which he was intended, he was called *Francis*. He is said to have been born with the figure of a cross on his right shoulder, and to have dreamt that he was designed by heaven to promote the interests of that holy sign. His disposition was naturally mild, his comprehension quick, his feelings acute, his manners easy, his imagination vivid, and his passions

* DR. LETTSOM has favoured the world with "Memoirs of the Life, both private and professional," of this great and good man; but no such transaction as above recorded is there to be found. There are, however, other Accounts of the Life and Character of DR. FOTHERGILL, by Dr. John Elliot, by Dr. William Hurd, and by Dr. Gilbert Thompson, which the translator has not had the opportunity of consulting.

passions inordinately warm. A careless and unrestrained indulgence of the propensities of youth, had led him into a variety of vicious habits and libertine extravagances, until the Solitude, to which a fit of sickness confined him, brought him to a recollection, and forced him to reflect upon the dangerous tendency of his past misconduct. His mind started with horror at the dreadful scene his retrospection presented to his view; and he resolved to quit the company of his former associates, to reform the profligacy of his life, to restore his character, and to save, by penitence and prayer, his guilty soul. These serious reflections wrought so powerfully on his dejected mind, that he fell into an extravagant kind of devotion, more resembling madness than religion. Fixing on a passage in *St. Matthew*, in which our Saviour desires his Apostles to *provide neither gold nor silver, nor brass in their purses; nor scrip for their journey; neither two coats, neither shoes, nor yet staves*; he was led to consider a voluntary and absolute poverty as the essence of the gospel, and to prescribe this poverty as a sacred rule both to himself and to the few who followed him. He accordingly wandered through the streets of *Assisi* in garments that scarcely concealed his nakedness, in order, as he said, to inure himself to the taunts and ridicule of his former companions, whom he now called the children

children of Sin, and followers of Satan. The father of the young saint, supposing, from these extravagances, that the sickness under which he had so long laboured had disordered his intellects, prepared to provide him with some proper place of confinement, until time or medical regimen should restore him to his right senses ; but the saint having been informed of his father's friendly intention, declined his paternal care, and quitting his house, sought a sanctuary in the palace of the Bishop of *Affisi*. The diocesan immediately sent to the father of the fugitive, and, after hearing him upon the subject of his right to provide for the safety of his son, he turned calmly to the son, and desired him to reply. The son immediately tore off the tattered garments which he then wore, and casting them with scorn and indignation at the feet of the astonished parent, exclaimed, "*There, take back all your property. You were, indeed, my earthly father ; but henceforth I disclaim you ; for I own no father but him who is in heaven.*" The bishop, either really or affectedly delighted with this unnatural rant of the young enthusiast, threw his own mantle over the saint, and exhorted him to persevere in his holy resolution, and to cherish with encreasing ardour the divine inspiration of his pious mind. The frantic youth, animated by the warm approbation of the bishop, proceeded



Thurston del

Ridley sc

*The Bishop of Assisi,
throwing his Garment over St. Francis.*

ceeded in his religious course, and, abandoning the city, retired into the deepest gloom of an adjacent forest, to indulge the fervors of that false enthusiasm which had overpowered his brain. In this retreat a second vision confirmed him in his holy office ; and being encouraged by Pope INNOCENT THE THIRD, and HONORIUS, he established, in the year 1209, the Order of *Saint Francis*. If this ridiculous enthusiast had corrected the extravagances of his overheated imagination, by a cool and temperate exercise of his reason, by studying, like the celebrated physician we have just mentioned, some liberal science, he might, with the talents he possessed, have become a really useful member of society. But these wild shoots, if suffered to grow to any height, cannot afterwards be easily eradicated : and even FOTHERGILL, if he had lived, like FRANCIS, in an age of superstitious delusion, and been encouraged to believe the truth of his fanatic conceptions, his temporary phrenzy might have continued through life ; and his character, instead of being revered as the promoter of an useful science, have been held up by an ignorant multitude to the contempt and ridicule of posterity.

The vacancy of Solitude, by leaving the mind to its own ideas, encourages to a great excess
these

these wild and eccentric fallies of the imagination. He who has an opportunity to indulge, without interruption or restraint, the delightful musings of an excursive fancy, will soon lose all relish for every other pleasure, and neglect every employment which tends to interrupt the gratification of such an enchanting, though dangerous a propensity. During the quietude of a sequestered life, Imagination usurps the throne of Reason, and all the feeble faculties of the mind obey her dictates, until her voice becomes despotic. If these high powers be exercised on the agreeable appearances of nature, and the various entertainments poetry, painting, music, or any of the elegant arts, are capable of affording,

Then the inexpressive strain
 Diffuses its enchantment: Fancy dreams
 Of sacred fountains, and Elysian groves,
 And vales of bliss: the intellectual power
 Bends from his awful throne a wondering ear,
 And smiles: the Passions, gently smooth'd away,
 Sink to divine repose; and Love and Joy
 Alone are waking.

But if the mind, as in the solitude of monastic seclusion, fixes its attention on ascetic subjects, and fires the fancy with unnatural legends, the soul, instead of sinking to divine repose, feels a morbid melancholy and discontented torpor, which

which extinguishes all rational reflection, and engenders the most fantastic visions.

Turn we awhile on lonely man our eyes,
 And see what frantic scenes of folly rise :
 In some dark monastery's gloomy cells,
 Where formal, self-presuming virtue dwells,
 Bedoz'd with dreams of grace-distilling caves,
 Of holy puddles, unconsuming graves,
 Of antimated plaster, wood, or stone,
 And mighty cures by fainted sinners done.
 Permit me, muse, still farther to explore,
 And turn the leaves of SUPERSTITION o'er,
 Where wonders upon wonders ever grow ;
 Chaos of zeal and blindness, mirth and woe ;
 Visions of devils into monkies turn'd,
 That, hot from hell, roar at a finger burn'd ;
 Bottles of precious tears that saints have wept,
 And breath a thousand years in phials kept ;
 Sun-beams sent down to prop one friar's staff,
 And hell broke loose to make another laugh ;
 Obedient fleas, and superstitious mice ;
 Confessing wolves, and sanctifying lice ; *

Harrafs'd

* The absurdities here pointed out, great and almost incredible as they may appear, were actually the consequences of an ill-formed and irrational Solitude, in St. Dominick, St. Cassino, St. Antony, St. Colman, St. Francis, St. Munna, St. Firman, St. Columba, and Maria de la Visitation, as may be seen by any who has sufficient phlegm to peruse "The Lives of the Saints;" and ZIMMERMAN, in his original work on Solitude, has introduced an account of many other extravagances of the same kind in the persons of Molanus, Serapion, Hilarion, Jerome, and others; most of which we have forborne to introduce
 into

Harrafs'd by watchings, abstinence, and chains;
 Strangers to joys, familiar grown with pains;
 To all the means of virtue they attend
 With strictest care, and only miss the end.
 For thus, when REASON stagnates in the brain,
 The dregs of FANCY cloud its purest vein.

Men even of strong natural understandings, highly improved by education, have, in some instances, not being able to resist the fatal effects of intense application and long-continued Solitude. The learned MOLANUS having, during a course of many years, detached his mind from all objects of sense, neglected all seasonable and salutary devotion, and given an uncontrollable license to his imagination, fancied, in the latter part of his life, that he was a *barley corn*; and although he received his friends with great courtesy and politeness, and conversed upon subjects both of science and devotion with great ease and ingenuity, he could never afterwards be persuaded to stir from home, lest, as he expressed his apprehension, he should be pecked up in the streets, and swallowed by a fowl.

The female mind is still more subject to these delusions of disordered fancy; for, as their feelings are more exquisite, their passions warmer,
 and

into this compilation, from the indecency of their illusions, and their tendency to corrupt the minds of youth.

and their imaginations more active than those of the other sex, SOLITUDE, when carried to excess, affects them in a much greater degree. Their bosoms are much more susceptible to the injurious influence of seclusion, to the contagion of example, and to the dangers of illusion. This may, perhaps, in some degree, account for the similarity of disposition which prevails in cloisters, and other institutions which confine women entirely to the company of each other. The force of example and habit is, indeed, in such retreats, surprisingly powerful. A French medical writer, of great merit, and undoubted veracity, relates, that, in a convent of nuns where the sisterhood was unusually numerous, one of the secluded fair ones was seized with a strange impulse to mew like a cat; that several others of the nuns in a short time followed her example; and that at length this unaccountable propensity became general throughout the convent; the whole sisterhood joining, at stated periods, in the practice of mewing, and continuing it for several hours. But of all the extraordinary fancies recorded of the sex, none can exceed that which CARDAN relates to have happened in one of the convents of Germany during the fifteenth century. One of the nuns, who had long been secluded from the sight of man, was seized with the strange propensity to bite

bite all her companions ; and, extraordinary as it may seem, this disposition spread until the whole house was infected with the same fury. The account, indeed, states, that this mania extended even beyond the walls of the convent, and that the disease was conveyed to such a degree from cloister to cloister, throughout Germany, Holland, and Italy, that the practice at length prevailed in every female convent in Europe.

These instances of the pernicious influence of a total dereliction of society, may possibly appear to the understandings of the present generation extravagant and incredible ; but they are certainly true ; and many others, of a similar nature, might be adduced from the most authentic histories of the times. The species, when prevented from enjoying a free intercourse and rational society with each other, almost change their nature ; and the mind, feeding continually on the melancholy musings of the imagination in the cold and cheerless regions of Solitude, engenders humours of the most eccentric cast. Excluded from those social communications which nature enjoins, with no means of gratifying the understanding, amusing the senses, or interesting the affections, fancy roves at large into unknown spheres, and endeavours to find in ideal forms, entertain-
ment

ment and delight. Angelic visions, infernal phantoms, amazing prodigies, the delusions of alchemy, the frenzies of philosophy, and the madness of metaphysics, fill the disordered brain. The intellect fastens upon some absurd idea, and fosters it with the fondest affection, until its encreasing magnitude subdues the remaining powers of sense and reason. The slightest retrospect into the conduct of the solitary professions of every religious system, proves the lamentable dangers to which they expose their mental faculties, by excluding themselves from the intercourses of rational society. From the prolific womb of Solitude sprung all the mysterious ravings, and senseless doctrines, of the *New Platonists*. The same cause devoted the monks and anchorites of the Christian church to folly and fanaticism. *Fakirs*, *Bramins*, and every other tribe of religious enthusiasts, originated from the same source. By abandoning the pleasures of society, and renouncing the feelings of nature, they sacrificed REASON upon the altar of SUPERSTITION, and supplied its place with extatic fancies and melancholy musings. There is nothing more evident, than that our holy religion, in its original constitution, was set so far apart from all refined speculations, that it seemed in a manner diametrically opposite to it. The Great Founder of Christianity gave one simple rule of
• life

life to all men ; but his disciples, anxious to indulge the natural vanity of the human mind, and misled, in some degree, by the false philosophy which at that period overspread the heathen world, introduced various doctrines of salvation, and new schemes of faith. Bigotry, a species of superstition hardly known before, took place in mens' affections, and armed them with new jealousies against each other : barbarous terms and idioms were every day invented ; monstrous definitions imposed ; and hostilities, the fiercest imaginable, exercised on each other by the contending parties. Fanaticism, with all the train of Visions, Prophecies, Dreams, Charms, Miracles, and Exercises, succeeded ; and spiritual feats of the most absurd and ridiculous nature were performed in monasteries, or up and down, by their mendicant or itinerant priests and ghostly missionaries. Solitude impressed the principles upon which these extravagances were founded with uncommon force on the imagination ; and the mind, working itself into holy fervors and inspirations, gave birth to new extravagances. The causes which operated on the minds of men to produce such ridiculous effects, acted with double force on the ardent temper, warm imagination, and excessive sensibility, of the female world. That which was mere phantasy with the one sex, became phrenzy with the other.

Women, indeed, are, according to the opinion of PLATO, the nurses of fanaticism; and their favourite theme is that which has been dignified by the appellation of a *sublime passion for piety*; an ardent and refined love of heaven; but which, in fact, is only the natural effects of the heart, swoln intumescently by an unreined, prolific, and too ardent imagination. Instances of this kind are discoverable in all the accounts that have been published of the holy fervors of these penitents, particularly in those of CATHARINE of Sienna, of JOAN of Cambray, of ANGELINA of Foligny, of MATILDA of Saxony, of MARIA of the Incarnation, of MARY MAGDALEN of Pazzio, of GERTRUDE of Saxony, and many others. The celebrated ARMELLE, who was born in the year 1606, at *Campenac*, in the diocese of *St. Malo*, and who died at *Vannes* in the year 1671, possessed great personal beauty, a quick and lively mind, and an uncommon tenderness of heart. Her parents, who were honest and industrious villagers, placed her as a menial servant in the house of a neighbouring gentleman, with whom she lived for five-and-thirty years, in the practice of the most exemplary piety, and extraordinary virtue; at least, according to the accounts which he gave from time to time of her conduct. During the time she resided with this gentleman, his groom finding the kitchen door fastened,

fastened, had the curiosity to peep through the key-hole, where he discovered the pious maid in a paroxysm of divine extacy performing the humble office of spitting a capon. The agitation of this holy spirit so affected the mind of the astonished youth, that, it is said by the Ursaline sister who has written the life of this great luminary of French sanctity, under the title of *The School for the Love of God*, he became immediately enamoured with the beauties of religion, and renouncing the pomps and vanities of the world, entered into a monastery at the same time that his holy companion thought proper to withdraw from future observation into the convent of *Vannes*, where she devoted the remainder of her life, and died, as it is reported, of an excess of divine love. The youthful days of ARMELLE had been passed in almost total solitude; for her occupation at the house in which she was placed by her parents was confined entirely to the kitchen, and she had scarcely any other intercourse than with its furniture. It appears, however, from the history of her life, that she was from her childhood excessively fond of reciting an *ave* or *pater noster*; and while occupied in tending the flocks, her original employment, amused herself in telling her rosary, “by which means,” says the Ursaline sister, “she made, even in her pastoral state of simplicity and ignorance, such



Thurston del.

Ridley sc

Armelle Nicholas, telling her Rosary.

Vol. 2. Page 165.

“ great advances in divine love, that the first
“ moment she was allowed to pay her adoration
“ to the CRUCIFIX, the fervency of her pious
“ passion burst forth with such extacy, that she
“ eagerly snatched the holy object to her arms,
“ and embraced it with a transport so warmly
“ affectionate, that streams of tenderness rushed
“ from her eyes.”

It is truly said by a celebrated English writer, to be “ of the utmost importance to guard against extremes of every kind in religion. We must beware, lest by seeking to avoid one rock, we split upon another. It has been long the subject of remark, that SUPERSTITION and ENTHUSIASM are two capital sources of delusion: Superstition, on the one hand, attaching men with immoderate zeal to the ritual and external points of religion; and Enthusiasm, on the other, directing their whole attention to internal emotions, and mystical communications with the spiritual world; while neither the one nor the other has paid sufficient regard to the great moral duties of the Christian life. But running with intemperate eagerness from these two great abuses of religion, men have neglected to observe that there are extremes opposite to each of them, into which they are in hazard of precipitating themselves. Thus the horror of Superstition

has sometimes reached so far as to produce contempt for all external institutions ; as if it were possible for Religion to subsist in the world without forms of worship, or public acknowledgment of God. It has also happened, that some who, in the main, are well affected to the cause of goodness, observing that persons of a devout turn have at times been carried away by warm affections into unjustifiable excesses, have thence hastily concluded that all DEVOTION was a-kin to Enthusiasm ; and separating Religion totally from the heart and affections, have reduced it to a frigid observance of what they call the rules of Virtue." These extremes are to be carefully avoided. True devotion is rational and well founded ; and consists in the lively exercise of that affection which we owe to the Supreme Being, comprehending several emotions of the heart, which all terminate in the same great object.

These are among the evils which an irrational Solitude is capable of producing upon an unrestrained and misdirected imagination : but I do not mean to contend indiscriminately, that Solitude is generally to be considered as dangerous to the free indulgence of this delightful faculty of the mind. Solitude well chosen, and rationally pursued, is so far from being either the open
 2 enemy

enemy or the treacherous friend of a firm and fine imagination, that it ripens its earliest shoots, strengthens their growth, and contributes to the production of its richest and most valuable fruits. To him who has acquired the happy art of enjoying in Solitude the charms of Nature, and of indulging the powers of Fancy without impairing the faculty of Reason,

————— Whate'er adorns

The princely dome, the column, and the arch,
 The breathing marble, and the sculptur'd gold,
 Beyond the proud possessor's narrow claim,
 His happy breast enjoys. For him the Spring
 Distills her dews, and from the silken gem
 Its lucid leaves unfolds : for him the hand
 Of Autumn tinges every fertile branch
 With blooming gold, and blushes like the morn.
 Each passing hour sheds tribute from her wings;
 And still new beauties meet his lonely walk,
 And loves unfelt attract him. Not a breeze
 Flies o'er the meadow, not a cloud imbibes
 The setting sun's effulgence, not a strain
 From all the tenants of the warbling shade
 Ascends, but whence his bosom can partake
 Fresh pleasure, unprov'd. Nor thence partakes
 Fresh pleasure only : for the attentive mind,
 By this harmonious action on her powers,
 Becomes herself harmonious. Wont so oft
 In outward things to meditate the charm
 Of sacred Order, soon she seeks at home
 To find a kindred order, to exert
 Within herself this elegance of love,

This fair inspir'd delight: her *temper'd* powers
 Refine at length; and every passion wears
 A chaster, milder, more attractive mien.
 But if to ampler prospects, if to gaze
 On Nature's face, where, negligent of all
 These lesser graces, she assumes the port
 Of that Eternal Majesty that weigh'd
 The world's foundations, if to these the mind
 Exalts her daring eye, then mightier far
 Will be the change, and nobler. Would the forms
 Of servile custom cramp her generous powers?
 Would sordid policies, the barbarous growth
 Of ignorance and rapine, bow her down
 To tame pursuits, to indolence and fear?
 Lo! she appeals to NATURE, to the winds
 And rolling waves, the sun's unwearied course,
 The elements and seasons: all declare
 For what the eternal Maker has ordain'd
 The powers of Man. We feel within ourselves
 His energy divine: he tells the heart
 He meant, he made us to behold and love
 What he beholds and loves, the general orb
 Of Life and Being; to be great like him,
 Beneficent and active. Thus the men
 Whom NATURE'S WORKS CAN CHARM, with God
 himself

Ho'd converse; grow familiar, day by day,
 With his conceptions, act upon his plan,
 And form to his the relish of their souls.

CHAPTER THE FIFTH.

THE EFFECTS OF SOLITUDE ON A
MELANCHOLY MIND.

A DISPOSITION to enjoy the silence of sequestered Solitude, and a growing distaste of the noisy tumults of public life, are the earliest and most general symptoms of approaching melancholy. The heart on which felicity was used to sit enthroned, becomes senseless to the touch of pleasure; the airy wing of high delight sinks prostrate to the earth on broken pinions; and care, anxiety, chagrin, and regret, loads the mind with distempering ideas, and renders it cheerless and forlorn. The dawning sun, and heaven-lighted day, give no pleasure to the sickened senses of the unhappy sufferer. His only pleasure is to “commune with his own griefs;” and for this purpose he seeks some gloomy glen;

“Where bitter boding Melancholy reigns

“O’er heavy sighs and care-disorder’d thoughts.”

But a mind thus disposed, however it may for a time console its sorrows* by retiring from the

I 3
world,

* METODORUS, in one of Seneca’s Epistles, says, that there is always a mixture of pleasure in the indulgence of sorrow:
And

world, thereby becomes more weak and helpless. Solitude in such cases increases the disorder while it softens its effects. To eradicate the seeds of this dreadful malady, the imagination should be impressed with some new, contrary, and more powerful bias than that which sways the mind, which can only be turned from its course of thought by shifting the objects of its reflection, and giving entrance to new desires. A melancholy mind, therefore, should be weaned by degrees from its disposition to solitude, should be agreeably interrupted in its musings, and be induced to relish the varying pleasures of the world. But, above all, those scenes and subjects which have any connection, however remotely, with the cause of the complaint, must be cautiously avoided. The seeds of this dreadful malady are in general very deeply planted in the constitution of the patient, however accidental the circumstances may be which call it forth ; and therefore the mind, even when relieved from its oppression, is, if left to itself, always

And MONTAIGNE was of opinion, that there is design, consent, complacency, in giving a man's self up to MELANCHOLY ; some shadow of delight and delicacy, which smiles upon and flatters us even in the very lap of Misery. Some characters even feed upon it, as OVID observes ;

“ ————— est quædam flere voluptas : ”

“ A certain kind of pleasure is to weep.”

always in danger of relapsing into its former habit. This circumstance alone is sufficient to show how unfriendly SOLITUDE must be to the cure of this complaint. If, indeed, the patient be so far gone as to leave no hope of recovery; if his desponding heart be incapable of no new impression; if his mind foregoes all custom of mirth; if he refuse to partake of any healthful exercise or agreeable recreation; and the soul sinks day after day into deeper dejection, and threatens nature with madness or with death, SOLITUDE is the only resource. When melancholy seizes to a certain degree the mind of AN ENGLISHMAN, it almost uniformly leads him to put a period to his existence; while the worst effect it produces on A FRENCHMAN, is to induce him to turn *Carthusian*. Such dissimilar effects, proceeding from the operation of the same cause, in different persons, can only be accounted for from the greater opportunities which there is in *France* than in *England* to hide the sorrows of the mind from the inspection of the world. An English hypochondriast would, perhaps, seldom destroy himself, if there were in *England* any monastic institution, to which he could fly from the eye of public observation.

The mind, in proportion as it loses its proper tone, and natural elasticity, decreases in its at-

tachment to Society, and wishes to recede from the world and its concerns.* There is no disorder of the mind, among all the various causes by which it may be affected, that destroys its force and activity so entirely as melancholy. It unties, as it were, all the relations, both physical and moral, of which Society, in its most perfect state, consists, and sets the soul free from all sense of obligation. The private link which unites the species is destroyed; all inclination to the common intercourses of life is lost; and the only remaining disposition is for SOLITUDE. It is for this reason that melancholy persons are continually advised to frequent the theatre, masquerades, operas, balls, and other places of public

* The disgust which a melancholy mind feels of the world and its concerns, is finely described by SHAKESPEARE, in the speech which HAMLET makes to the two courtiers *Rosincrantz* and *Guildestern*.—"I have of late, but wherefore I know not, lost all my mirth, forgone all custom of exercise: and, indeed, it goes so heavily with my disposition, that this goodly frame, THE EARTH, seems to me a sterile promontory; this most excellent canopy, THE AIR, look you, this brave o'erhanging firmament, this majestical roof fretted with golden fire, why, it appears no other thing to me, than a foul and pestilent congregation of vapours. What a piece of work is MAN! how noble in reason! how infinite in faculties! in form, and moving, how express and admirable! in action, how like an angel! in apprehension, how like a god! the beauty of the world! the paragon of animals! and yet, to me, what is this quintessence of dust? MAN delights not me,—nor WOMAN neither."

public diversion ; to amuse themselves at home with cards, dice, or other games ; or to infuse from the eyes of female beauty, new life into their drooping souls. Certain it is, that great advantages may be derived by detaching the mind from those objects by which it is tortured and consumed ; but to run indiscriminately, and with injudicious eagerness, into the pursuit of pleasures, without any pre-disposition to enjoy them, may rather tend to augment than diminish the disease.

The eye of Melancholy views every object on its darkest and most unfavourable side, and apprehends disastrous consequences from every occurrence. These gloomy perceptions, which increase as the feelings become more indolent, and the constitution more morbid, bring on habitual uneasiness and chagrin upon the mind, and render every injury, however small and trifling it may be, irksome and insupportable. A settled dejection ensues ; and the miserable patient avoids every scene in which his musings may be liable to interruption ; the few enjoyments he is yet capable of feeling, in any degree impeded ; or which may call upon him to make the slightest exertion ; and, by withdrawing himself from Society into Solitude, neglects the exercises and recreations by which his disease might be relieved.

Instead of endeavouring to enlighten the dark gloom which involves his mind, and subdues his soul, by regarding with a favourable eye, all that gives a true value and high relish to men of sound minds and lively dispositions, he fondly follows the phantom which misleads him, and thereby sinks himself more deeply into the moody fanes of irremediable melancholy: and if the bright rays of life and happiness penetrate by chance into the obscurity of his retreat, instead of feeling any satisfaction from the perception of cheerfulness and content, he quarrels with the possessors of them, and converts their enjoyments into subjects of grievance, in order to torment himself.*

Unfavourable,

* We cannot refuse ourselves the pleasure of presenting to our readers the following beautiful passage upon this subject from FITZOSBORNE'S LETTERS. "I am persuaded," says this elegant writer, "this disgust of life is frequently indulged out of a principle of mere vanity. It is esteemed as a mark of uncommon refinement, and as placing a man above the ordinary level of his species, to seem superior to the vulgar feelings of happiness. True good sense, however, most certainly consists not in despising, but in managing, our stock of life to the best advantage, as a cheerful acquiescence in the measures of Providence, is one of the strongest symptoms of a well-constituted mind. Self-weariness is a circumstance that ever attends folly; and to condemn our being is the greatest and, indeed, the peculiar infirmity of human nature. It is a noble sentiment which TULLY puts into the mouth of CATO, in his Treatise upon
Old

Unfavourable, however, as a dreary and dis-
 consolate Solitude certainly is to the recovery of a
 I 6 mind

Old Age: "*Non lubet mihi,*" says that venerable Roman: "*deplorare vitam, quod multi, et ù docti, sæpe fecerunt; neque me vixisse pœnitet: quoniam ita vixi, ut non frustra me natam existimem.*" It is in the power, indeed, of but a very small portion of mankind, to act the same glorious part that afforded such high satisfaction to this distinguished patriot; but the number is yet far more inconsiderable of those who cannot, in any station, secure themselves a sufficient fund of complacency to render life justly valuable. Who is it that is placed out of the reach of the highest of all gratifications, those of the generous affections, and that cannot provide for his own happiness, by contributing something to the welfare of others? As this disease of the mind generally breaks out with the most violence in those who are supposed to be endowed with a greater delicacy of taste and reason than is the usual allotment of their fellow-creatures, one may ask them, whether there is a satiety in the pursuits of useful knowledge, or if one can be weary of benefiting mankind? Will not the fine arts supply a lasting feast to the mind? Or can there be wanting a pleasurable enjoyment, so long as there remains even one advantageous truth to be discovered or confirmed? To complain that life has no joys, while there is a creature whom we can relieve by our bounty, assist by our counsels, or enliven by our presence, is to lament the loss of that which we possess, and is just as rational as to die for thirst with the cup in our hands. But the misfortune is, when a man is settled into a habit of receiving all his pleasures from the more selfish indulgencies, he wears out of his mind the relish of every nobler enjoyment, at the same time that his powers of the sensual kind are growing more languid by each repetition. It is no wonder, therefore, he should fill up the measure of his gratification long before he has completed the circle of his duration; and either wretchedly sit down the remainder of his days in melancholy retirement, or rashly throw them up in despair."

mind labouring under this grievous affliction, it is far preferable to the society of licentious companions, and to wild scenes of inebriating dissipation. Worldly pleasures, and sensual gratifications of every description, when intemperately pursued, only drive a melancholy mind into a more abject state of dejection. It is from rational recreation, and temperate pleasures alone, that an afflicted mind can receive amusement and delight. The only scenes by which the muddled current of his mind can be cleared, or his stagnated system of pleasure refreshed, must be calm, yet cheerful, and temperate, yet gay. Melancholy is of a sedate and pensive character, and flies from whatever is hurrying and tumultuous. How frequently do men of contemplative dispositions conceive a distate for the world, only because they have unthinkingly engaged so ardently in the pursuits of pleasure, or of business, that they have been prevented, for a length of time, from collecting their scattered ideas, and indulging their natural habits of reflection ! But, in endeavouring to reclaim a melancholy mind, it is necessary to attend to the feelings of the heart, as well as to the peculiar temper of the mind. A gloomy, disturbed, unquiet mind, is highly irritated, and its disease of course increased, by the company and conversation of those whose senseless bosoms are incapable of feeling the griefs it endures, or
the

the complaints it utters. This, indeed, is another cause which drives melancholy persons from Society into Solitude; for how few are there whose tenderness leads them to sympathize with a brother in distress, or to contribute a kind aid to eradicate the thorns which rankle in his heart! Robust characters, in whose bosoms nature has planted the impenetrable shields of unvarying health, as well as those whose minds are engrossed by the charms of uninterrupted prosperity, can form no idea of the secret but severe agonies which shake the system of valetudinary men; nor feel any compassion for the tortures which accompany a wounded and afflicted spirit, until the convulsive frame proclaims the dreadful malady, or increasing melancholy sacrifices its victim on the altar of self-destruction. The gay associates of the unfeeling world, view a companion suffering under the worst of nature's evils, with cold indifference or affected concern; or, in the career of pleasure, overlook the miseries he feels, until they hear that exhausted woe has induced him to brave the anger of the Almighty, and to rush from mortal misery, uncalled, into the awful presence of his Creator. Dreadful state! The secrecy and silence, indeed, with which persons of this description conceal the pangs that torture their minds, is among the most dangerous symptoms of the disease. It
is

is not, indeed, easy to hide from the anxious and attentive eye of real friendship, the feelings of the heart; but to the careless and indifferent multitude of common acquaintances, the countenance may wear the appearance not only of composure, but even of gaiety, while the soul is inwardly suffering the keenest anguish of unutterable woe. The celebrated CARLINI, a French actor of great merit, and in high reputation with the public, for the life, whim, frolic and vivacity with which he nightly entertained the Parisian audiences, applied to a physician, to whom he was not personally known, for advice, and represented to him, that he was subject to attacks of the deepest melancholy. The physician advised him to amuse his mind by scenes of pleasure, and particularly directed him to frequent the Italian Comedy; "for," continued he, "your distemper must be rooted, indeed, if the acting of the lively CARLINI does not remove it." "Alas!" exclaimed the unhappy patient, "I am the very CARLINI whom you recommend me to see; and while I am capable of filling *Paris* with mirth and laughter, I am myself the dejected victim of melancholy and chagrin."

Painful as it may be to a person who is labouring under the oppression of melancholy, to associate with those who are incapable of sympathizing

ing

ing with his feelings, or who neglect to compassionate his sufferings, yet he should not fly from the presence of men into Solitude; for Solitude will unavoidably aggravate and augment his distress, inasmuch as it tends to encourage that musing and soliloquy to which melancholy is invariably prone. It is the most dangerous resource to which he can fly: for, while it seems to promise the fairest hopes of relief, it betrays the confidence reposed in it; and, instead of shielding its votary from that conflict which disturbs his repose, it renders him defenceless, and delivers him unarmed to his bitterest enemy.

The boldest spirits, and firmest nerves, cannot withstand the inroads of melancholy merely by their own strength. It damps the courage of the most enterprising mind, and makes him who was before, upon all occasions, fearless and unawed, shrink even from the presence of his fellow-creatures. Company of every description becomes displeasing to him; he dreads the idea of visiting; and if he is induced to quit the domestic Solitude into which he retires, it is only when the glorious, but to him offensive, light of heaven is concealed in congenial darkness, and the shades of night hide him from the observation of man. An invitation to social entertainment alarms his mind; the visit even of a friend becomes painful to his feelings;

feelings ; and he detests every thing which lightens the gloom in which he wishes to live, or which tends to disturb his privacy, or remove him from retreat.

ROUSSEAU, towards the latter part of his life, abandoned all intercourse with Society, under a notion, which was the effect of his melancholy disposition, that the world had conceived an unconquerable antipathy against him ; and that his former friends, particularly HUME, and some philosophers in France, not only had entered into a confederacy to destroy his glory and repose, but to take away his life. On departing from *England*, he passed through *Amiens*, where he met with GRESSET, who interrogated him about his misfortunes, and the controversies in which he had been engaged ; but ROUSSEAU only answered, “ You have got the art of making a parrot speak, but you are not yet possessed of the secret of giving language to a bear.” And when the magistrates of the city wished to confer on him some marks of their esteem, he refused all their offers, and considered these flattering civilities like the insults which were lavished in the same form on the celebrated SANCHO in the island of *Barataria*. To such extent, indeed, did his disordered imagination carry him, that he thought one part of the people looked upon him like

LAZARILLO

LAZARILLO DE TORMES, who, being fixed to the bottom of a tub, with only his head out of the water, was carried from one town to another to amuse the vulgar. His bad health, a strong and melancholy imagination, a too nice sensibility, a jealous disposition, joined with philosophic vanity, and his uncommon devotion to solitude, tended to prepossess him with those wrong and whimsical ideas. But it must be confessed, that the opposition he met with from different ranks of persons, at several periods of his life, was extremely severe. He was driven at one time from *France*, in which he had before been distinguished by his writings, and highly honoured. At another time he was chased from *Geneva*, the place of his nativity, and of his warmest affection. He was exiled from *Berne* with disgrace; expelled, with some appearance of injustice, from *Neufchatel*; and even banished from his tranquil solitude on the borders of the lake of *Bienne*. His disposition, therefore, to avoid society, must not be entirely attributed to his melancholy disposition; nor his love of solitude to a misanthropic mind. Every acute and scientific observer of the life and character of this extraordinary man, will immediately perceive, that the seeds of that melancholy disposition, and fretful temper, which through life destroyed his repose, were sown by nature in his constitution.

constitution. He confesses, indeed, to use his own words, that “a proud misanthropy, and peculiar contempt for the riches and pleasures of the world, constituted the chief traits of his character.” This proud spirit and contemptuous mind, were mixed with an extreme sensibility of heart, and an excessive indolence of disposition; and his body, which was naturally feeble, suffered, from ill health, the keenest agonies, and most excruciating disorders, to which the human frame is incident. Persecution also had levelled the most pointed and severely-barbed shafts against him; and he was forced to endure, amidst the pangs of poverty, and the sorrows of sickness, all that envy, hatred, and malice, could inflict. It has been said, that the persecutions he experienced, were not so much excited by the new dogmas, or eccentric paradoxes, which, both on politics and religion, pervade all his writings, as by the refinement of his extraordinary talents, the wonderful splendor of his eloquence, and the increasing extent of his fame. His adversaries certainly pursued him not only with bigotry and intolerance, but with an inconsistency which revealed, in a great degree, the secret motives by which they were actuated; for they condemned, with the sharpest virulence, the freedom of his religious tenets, even in places where the religious creed of VOLTAIRE was held in the highest

highest admiration, and where atheism had collected the most learned advocates, and displayed the very standard of infidelity and disbelief. Harassed by the frowns of fortune, and pursued with unrelenting enmity by men whose sympathy and kindness he had anxiously endeavoured to obtain, it is scarcely surprising that the cheerfulness of his disposition, and the kindness of his heart, should be subdued by those sentiments of aversion and antipathy, which he fancied most of his intimates entertained against him : And the invectives from the pen of his former friend and confidant, VOLTAIRE, together with many others that might be adduced, particularly the letter which was fabricated in the name of the KING OF PRUSSIA, for the purpose of exposing him to ridicule, prove that his suspicions on this subject were not unfounded. The voice, indeed, of mankind, seems ready to exclaim, that this eccentric philosopher was not only a misanthrope, but a madman ; but those who are charitably disposed, will recollect, that he was a martyr to ill health ; that nature had bestowed upon him a discontented mind ; that his nerves were in a continual state of irritation ; that to preserve equanimity of temper, when goaded by the shafts of calumny and malice, requires such an extraordinary degree of fortitude and passive courage, as few individuals are found to

to possess. His faults are remembered, while the wonderful bloom and uncommon vigour of his genius, are forgotten or concealed. The production from which his merits are in general estimated, is that which is called "*The Confessions*;" a work written under the pressure of calamity, in sickness, and in sorrow; amidst fears, distresses, and sufferings; when the infirmities which accompany old age, and the debility which attends continual ill health, had injured the tone of his mind, overpowered his reason, and perverted his feelings to such a degree, as to create an almost total transformation of the character of the man, and deprive him of his identity: but this degrading work ought, in candour, to be considered as a deplorable instance of the weakness of human nature, and how unable it is to support its own dignity, when attacked by the adversities of fortune, and the malice of mankind. The greatness of ROUSSEAU ought to be erected on a different basis: for his earliest works are certainly sufficient to support the extent of his fame as an author, however they may on particular subjects expose his integrity as a man.*

The

* JEAN JAQUES ROUSSEAU was born at *Geneva*, on the 28th of June, 1712, of extremely obscure parents, and was led to his fondness for learning by accidentally finding a *Plutarch* and a *Tacitus* in his father's workshop. He died at *Paris* on the 2d of July, 1778.

The anxieties which a vehemence of imagination, and a tender texture of the nervous system, at all times produce, are highly injurious to the faculties of the mind; and when accompanied by sickness or by sorrow, wear out the intellect in proportion to its vigour and activity. To use the popular metaphor upon this subject, "The sword becomes too sharp for the scabbard;" and the body and the mind are thereby exposed to mutual destruction. The tear of pity would drop even from the jaundiced eye of jealousy, were it capable of discerning the direful pangs with which the successful candidates for fame purchase their envied pre-eminence. Calumny would dash its poisoned chalice to the ground, were the heart-rending sighs which but too often accompany the labours of genius more generally known. Disease, anxiety, pain, languor, despondency, and a long train of oppressive maladies, are the usual fruits of intense application and continual study: the faculties frequently sink under their own exertions; and the bright prospects which hope sometimes delusively opens to the view, often close in eternal darkness. Were these circumstances recollected, envy would not only withhold its sting, and malice forego its mischief, but listen to the voice of pity, and reluctantly offer to the victim their kindest solace and support. Of the truth of these observations
the

the celebrated HALLER furnishes a memorable, but melancholy instance. Urged by the love of fame to prosecute his various studies with unremitting severity, his spirits became at length so terribly depressed, that the great powers of his once vigorous and exalted mind were impeded in their exertion, until opium, or some other medicine of a similar nature, released them from the melancholy by which they were subdued. So thick, indeed, was the gloom which overspread his mind, that he frequently fancied a vast abyss was opening before him, and that demons were waiting to drag him down, in order to inflict the most direful tortures on his soul, for the moral errors into which he conceived he had been involuntarily betrayed.

Religious melancholy is, of all other descriptions of this dreadful disease, most heightened and aggravated by Solitude. The dreadful idea of having irretrievably lost the divine favour, and of being an object unworthy of the intercession of our Saviour, incessantly haunts the mind labouring under religious despondency; and the imagination being left, in solitude, entirely to its own workings, encreases the horrors which such thoughts must unavoidably inspire.

Her lash TISIPHONE that moment shakes;
 The *mind* she scourges with a thousand snakes;
And

And to her aid, with many a thundering yell,
Calls her dire sisters from the gulph of hell!

These mental tortures, even when heightened by the gloominess of solitude, are frequently still further increased by the mischievous doctrines of bigoted priests, who, by mistaking the effects of nervous derangement, or theological errors, for the compunctious visitings of a guilty mind, establish and mature, by the injudicious application of scriptural texts, and precepts of casuistry, the very disease which they thus ignorantly and presumptuously endeavour to remove. The wound, thus tainted by the most virulent and corrosive of the intellectual poisons, becomes extremely difficult to cure. The pure and uncontaminated tenets of the Christian faith, furnish, perhaps, the surest antidotes; and when these balms of true comfort are infused by such enlightened and discerning minds as LUTHER, TILLOTSON, and CLARKE, the most rational hope may be entertained of a speedy recovery. The writings of these holy teachers confirm the truth of the observation, that the deleterious gloom of superstition assumes a darker aspect in the shades of retirement; and they uniformly exhort the unhappy victims of this religious error, to avoid Solitude as the most certain enemy of this dreadful infirmity.

SOLITUDE,

SOLITUDE, however, is not the only soil in which this noxious weed springs up, and spreads around its baleful glooms ; it sometimes appears with deeply-rooted violence in minds unused to retirement of every kind. In the course of my practice as a physician, I was called upon to attend a young lady, whose natural disposition had been extremely cheerful, until a severe fit of sickness damped her spirits, and rendered her averse to all those lively pleasures which fascinate the youthful mind. The debility of her frame, and the change of her temper, were not sufficiently attended to in the early stages of her convalescence. The anxiety of her mind was visible in the altered features of her face ; and she was frequently heard to express a melancholy regret, that she had consumed so many hours in the frivolous, though innocent, amusements of the age. Time increased, by almost imperceptible degrees, these symptoms of approaching melancholy ; and at length exhibited themselves by penitential lamentations of the SIN she had committed with respect to the most trifling actions of her life, and in which no shadow of offence could possibly be found. At the time I was called in, this superstitious melancholy was attended with certain indications of mental derangement. The distemper clearly originated in the indisposition of the body, and the

the gloomy apprehensions which disease and pain had introduced into the mind during a period of many months. This once lively, handsome, but now almost insane female, was daily attacked with such violent paroxysms of her complaint, that she lost all sense of her situation, and exclaimed, in horrid distraction and deep despair, that her perdition was already accomplished, and that *the fiends were waiting to receive her soul, and plunge it into the bitterest torments of Hell*. Her constitution, however, still fortunately retained sufficient strength to enable me, by the power of medicine, gradually to change its temperament, and to reduce the violence of the fever which had been long preying on her life. Her mind became more calm in proportion as her nerves recovered their former tone ; and when her intellectual powers were in a condition to be acted on with effect, I successfully counteracted the baleful effects of SUPERSTITION by the wholesome infusion of real RELIGION, and restored, by degrees, a lovely, young and virtuous woman to her family and herself.

Another instance of a similar nature occurred very recently, in which the patient experienced all those symptoms which prognosticate the approach of religious melancholy, and the completion of whose sorrow and despondency would

quickly have been effected, if good fortune had not deprived her of the advice of an ignorant and bigotted priest, to whom her friends, when I was called in, had resolved to apply. This young lady, whose mind remained pure and uncorrupted amidst all the luxuries and dissipations which usually accompany illustrious birth and elevated station, possessed by nature great tranquillity of disposition, and lived with quietude and content, far retired from the pleasures of the world. I had been long acquainted with her family, and entertained for them the warmest esteem. The dangerous condition of her health gave me great anxiety and concern; for whenever she was left one moment to herself, and even in company, whenever she closed her eyes, a thousand horrid spectres presented themselves to her disordered mind, and seemed ready to devour her from every corner of the apartment. I enquired whether these imaginary spectres made any impression upon the affections of her heart, but she answered in the negative; and described the horrors which she felt from the supposed fierceness of their eyes, and the threatening gesticulations of their bodies. I endeavoured to compose her, by assuring her, that they were the creatures of her own fancy; the wild chimeras of a weakened brain; that her long course of ill health had affected her mind; and that, when a proper course of medicine, dietic

dietic regimen, and gentle exercise, had restored her strength, these dreadful appearances would give way to the most delightful visions. The course I pursued succeeded in a short time beyond my most sanguine expectations, and I raised her languid powers to health and happiness. But if she had confided the anxieties of her mind to her confessor instead of her physician, the holy father would, in all probability, have ascribed her gloomy apprehension to the machinations of the devil, and have used nothing but purely spiritual antidotes to destroy them, which would have increased the melancholy, and possibly have thrown her into the darkest abyss of madness and despair.

This grievous malady, indeed, is not the exclusive offspring of mistaken piety and religious zeal; for it frequently invades minds powerful by nature, improved by science, and assisted by rational society. Health, learning, conversation, highly advantageous as they unquestionably are to the powers both of the body and the mind, have, in particular instances, been found incapable of resisting the influence of intense speculation, an atrabilarious constitution, and a superstitious habit. I have already mentioned the thick cloud of melancholy which obscured the latter days of the great and justly-celebrated HALLER, which were

passed under the oppression of a religious despondency, that robbed him not only of all enjoyment, but almost of life itself. During the long period of four years immediately antecedent to his death, he lived (if such a state can be called existence) in continual misery ; except, indeed, at those short intervals when the returning powers of his mind enabled him, by the employment of his pen, to experience a temporary relief. A long course of ill health had forced him into an excessive use of *opium*, and, by taking gradually increased quantities of that inspissated juice,* he kept

* *OPIMUM* is the juice of the *papaver album*, or *white poppy*, with which the fields of *Asia Minor* are in many places sown, as ours are with corn. When the heads are near ripening, they wound them with an instrument that has five edges, which, on being struck into the head, makes at once five long cuts in it ; and from these wounds the *opium* flows, and is next day taken off by a person who goes round the field, and put into a vessel which he carries fastened to his girdle. At the same time that this opium is collected, the opposite side of the poppy head is wounded, and the *opium* collected from it the ensuing day. They distinguish, however, the produce of the first wounds from that of the succeeding ones ; for the first juice afforded by the plant is greatly superior to what is obtained afterwards. After they have collected the *opium*, they moisten it with a small quantity of water or honey, and work it a long time upon a flat, hard, smooth board, with a thick and long instrument of the same wood, till it becomes of the consistence of pitch, and then work it up with their hands, or form it into cakes or rolls for sale. It contains gum, rosin, essential oil, salt, and earthy matter ; but its narcotic and somniferous power has been experimentally found to reside in its essential oil.

kept himself continually fluctuating between a state of mind unnaturally elevated and deeply dejected; for the first effects of this powerful drug are like those of a strong stimulating cordial, but they are soon succeeded by universal languor, or irresistible propensity to sleep, attended with dreams of the most agitated and enthusiastic nature.* I was myself an eye witness of the dreary melancholy into which this great and good man was plunged about two years before the kind, but cold, and though friendly, yet unwelcome, hand of Death released him from his pains. The society which during that time he was most solicitous to obtain, was that of priests and ecclesiastics of every description: he was uneasy when they were not with him: nor was he always happy in his choice of these spiritual comforters;

K 3

for

* OPIUM is the most sovereign remedy in the *Materia Medica* for easing pain and procuring sleep; and also the most certain antispasmodic yet known; but, like other powerful medicines, becomes highly noxious to the human constitution, and even mortal, when improperly administered. Its liberal and long-continued use has been observed greatly to injure the brain and nerves, and to diminish their influence on the vital organs of the body. By its first effects, which are exhilarating, it excites a kind of temporary delirium, which dissipates and exhausts the spirits; and, by its subsequent narcotic power, occasions confusion of ideas and loss of memory, attended with nausea, giddiness, headach, and constipation in the bowels. It suspends or diminishes, in short, all the natural secretions and excretions of the body, that of perspiration alone excepted.

for though, at times, he was attended by some of the most enlightened and orthodox divines of the age and country in which he lived, he was at others surrounded by those whom nothing but the reduced and abject state of his faculties would have suffered him to endure. But during even this terrible subversion of his intellectual powers, his love of glory still survived in its original radiance, and defied all the terrors both of heaven and earth to destroy or diminish their force. HALLER had embraced very deep and serious notions of the importance of Christianity to the salvation of the soul, and the redemption of mankind, which, by the ardency of his temper, and the saturnine disposition of his mind, were carried into a mistaken zeal and apprehension; and, instead of affording the comfort and consolation its tenets and principles are so eminently calculated to inspire, aggravated his feelings, and destroyed his repose. In a letter which he wrote a few days before his death, to his great and good friend, the celebrated HEYNE of *Göttingen*, in which he announces the deep sense he then entertained, from his great age and multiplied infirmities, of his impending dissolution, he expressed his firm belief of REVELATION, and his faith in the mercy of GOD and the intercession of JESUS CHRIST; but hints his fears lest the manifold sins, and the various errors and transgressions

transgressions which the natural frailty of man must have accumulated during a course of seventy years, should have rendered his soul too guilty to expect the promised mercy to repentant sinners, and earnestly requests of him to enquire of his acquaintance LESS, the virtuous divine of that place, whether he could not furnish him with some pious work, that might tend to decrease the terrors he felt from the idea of approaching death, and relieve his tortured spirit from the apprehension of eternal punishment.*

K 4

The

* In one account of the life of HALLER, it is said that, although his declining health restrained his exertions in the most active scenes of life, it did not put a period to his utility; for that with indefatigable industry he continued, while confined to his house, his favourite employment of writing till within a few days of his death; which happened in the 70th year of his age, on the 12th of December, 1777. His *Elementa Physiologiæ* and *Bibliotheca Medicina* will afford, to latest posterity, undeniable proofs of his indefatigable industry, penetrating genius, and solid judgment. But he was not less distinguished as a philosopher than beloved as a man; and he was not more eminent in every department of science, than for his piety to God, and benevolence to all mankind. But the approach of death is awful to the most virtuous minds; “for surely,” says an able writer upon this subject, “nothing can so much disturb the passions, or perplex the intellects of man, as the disruption of his union with visible nature, a separation from all that has hitherto delighted or engaged him; a change not only of the place, but of the manner of being; an entrance into a state not simply which he knows not, but which, perhaps, he has not faculties to know;

The sentiments which occupied the mind of this pious philosopher when the dreaded hour actually arrived, whether it was comforted by the bright rays of hope, or dismayed into total eclipse by the dark clouds of despair, those who surrounded his dying couch have not communicated to the world.

know ; an immediate and perceptible communication with the Supreme Being ; and, what is above all distressful and alarming, the final sentence and unalterable allotment." Dr. JOHNSON, however, experienced the great alleviations which a steady faith, and firm sense of Christianity, are capable of affording to these awful apprehensions. He insisted that Dr. BROCKLESBY should tell him plainly whether he could recover ; and on being answered that his recovery was impossible, except by a miracle, he resolved to take no more physic, not even opiates ; for he had prayed, he said, that he might render up his soul to God unclouded. He became perfectly resigned to his approaching fate ; all his fears of death were calmed and absorbed by the prevalence of his faith, and his trust in the merits and propitiation of JESUS CHRIST. He pressed his surrounding friends to study Dr. CLARK'S Sermons, because, though an Arian, he is fullest on the propitiatory sacrifice ; for he was convinced of the necessity of faith in the sacrifice of JESUS, as necessary beyond all good works whatever for the salvation of mankind. Having thus in his mind the true Christian scheme, at once rational and consolatory, uniting justice and mercy in THE DIVINITY with the improvement of human nature, he received the holy sacrament, and, after composing and fervently uttering a pious prayer, he expired on the 9th of December, 1784, aged seventy-five, with calm content and perfect resignation, breathing, with almost his last breath, a devout hope of divine grace in favour of a young lady, a Miss MORRIS, who at that moment requested his blessing. He died, in short, as he lived, full of resignation, strengthened in faith, and joyful in hope.

world. Death, while, it released both his body and his mind from the painful infirmities and delusions under which they had so long and so severely suffered, left his fame, which, while living, he had valued much dearer than his life, exposed to the cruel shafts of slander and malevolence. A young nobleman of the canton of *Berne*, either moved by his own malice, or made an instrument of the malice of others, asserted in a letter, which was for a long time publicly exhibited in the university of *Göttingen*, that HALLER had in his last moments denied his belief of the truth of Christianity. But those by whom he was then surrounded, betray, by the propagation of this falsehood, the fears they entertain of the firm support which his approbation would have given to that pure and pious system of religion, which they, it is well known, are so disposed to destroy. For certain it is, that HALLER never doubted of any of the attributes of the Deity, except his mercy: and this doubt was not the offspring of infidelity, but a crude abortion of that morbid melancholy which, during his latter days, settled so severely on his distempered mind. The same dread which he entertained of death, has been felt with equal, if not greater, horror by minds as powerful, and less superstitious. He candidly confessed the important and abstruse point upon which he had not been able to satisfy himself.

His high sense of virtue made even his own almost exemplary and unblemished life appear, in his too refined speculations, grossly vicious. MERCY he knew must unavoidably be correlative with JUSTICE; and he unfortunately conceived that no repentance, however sincere, could so purify the sinful, and, as he imagined, deplorable corruption of his soul, as to render it worthy of divine grace: So utterly had the melancholy dejection of his mind deprived him of a just sense of his own character, and a perfect knowledge of the nature of THE ALMIGHTY. The mournful propensity of this great man must, if he had passed his days either in pious abstinence, or irrational solitude, have hurried him rapidly into irrecoverable phrenzy: but HALLER enjoyed the patronage of the great, the conversation of the learned, the company of the polite; and he not only suspended the effects of his malady, and of the medicines by which he attempted to relieve it, by these advantages, but by the sciences, which he so dearly loved, and so successfully cultivated. The horrible evil, however, bowed him down in spite of all his efforts, and particularly oppressed him whenever he relaxed from his literary pursuits, or consulted his ghostly comforters on the lost condition of his soul.

SOLITUDE, to a mind labouring under these erroneous notions of religion, operates like a rack,

rack, by which the imagination inflicts the severest tortures on the soul. A native of Geneva, a young man of very elegant manners, and a highly cultivated mind, some time since consulted me upon the subject of a nervous complaint, which I immediately discovered to be the consequence of a mistaken zeal for religion; a disposition naturally sedentary, and a habit which is too frequently indulged in solitude by unthinking youth. These circumstances had already made the most dreadful inroads both on his body and his mind. His emaciated frame was daily enfeebled by his paralysed intellects, and he at length fell into a settled melancholy, which continued four years to defy the power of medicine, and finally destroyed his nervous system. A strong conviction of the heinous sin into which the blindness of his passion, and evil example, had led him, at length flashed suddenly on his mind, and he felt, with the keenest compunctions of a wounded conscience, how impious he must appear to the all-seeing eye of the Great Creator. Consternation and dismay seized his guilty mind; and the sense of virtue and religion, which he was naturally disposed to entertain, served only to encrease his horror and distraction. He would have sought a refuge from the arrows of remorse under the protecting shields of penitence and prayer, but a scrupulous apprehension interposed

the idea that it would be profanation in so guilty a sinner to exercise the offices of a pure and holy religion. He at length, however, proceeded to confession ; but recollecting, after every disclosure, that he had still omitted many of his transgressions, additional horrors seized upon his mind, and tortured his feelings on the irrecoverable condition of his guilty soul. At intervals, indeed, he was able to perceive that the perturbations of his mind were the produce of his disorganized frame and disordered spirit ; and he endeavoured to recruit the one by air and exercise, and to dissipate the other by scenes of festivity and mirth : but his disorder had fixed its fibres too deeply in his constitution to be eradicated by such slight and temporary remedies. From the inefficacious antidotes of social pleasure and worldly dissipation, he was induced to try the calm and sedentary effects of solitary study ; but his faculties were incapable of tasting the refined and elegant occupations of learning and the muse : his powers of reasoning were destroyed ; his sensibilities, excepting on the subject of his complaint, were dried up ; and neither the sober investigations of science, nor the more lively charms of poetry, were capable of affording him the least consolation. Into so abject a state, indeed, did his intellectual faculties at length fall, that he had not, during one period, sufficient ability to compute

pute the change due to him from any piece of coin in the common transactions of life; and he confessed that he had been frequently tempted, by the deepness of his distress, to release both his body and his mind from their cruel sufferings, and “to shake impatiently his great affliction off” by self-destruction; but that the idea of heaping new punishments on his soul, by the perpetration of this additional crime, continually interposed, and saved him from the guilty deed. During this state of mental derangement, he fortunately met with a liberal-minded and rational divine, who, free from the errors of priestcraft, and possessed of a profound knowledge of the virtues of religion, and the structure of the human mind, undertook the arduous, but humane and truly philosophic task, of endeavouring to bring back his mind to a rational sense of its guilt, and to a firm hope of pardon through the intercession of our Saviour. Religion, that sweet and certain comforter of human woes, at length effected a partial recovery, and restored him to a degree of tranquillity and repose: but he still continued to suffer, for years afterwards, so great a misery from the shattered condition of his nerves, that he could not even compose a letter upon the most trifling and indifferent subject without the greatest labour and pain. As his feelings had never been hurt by any sense of injury received from man-

kind,

kind, he entertained no antipathy to his species ; but as he was conscious that his reduced state of health prevented him from keeping up any rational or pleasing intercourse with them, he felt a sort of abhorrence to society, and refused, even when advised by his physicians and intimate friends, to mingle in its pleasures, or engage in its concerns. The proposal, indeed, appeared as extravagant and absurd to his feelings, as if a man, almost choaking under the convulsion of a confirmed asthma, had been told that it was only necessary for him to breathe freely, in order to acquire perfect ease. This deplorable state of health induced him to consult several Italian and English physicians ; and being advised to try the effects of a sea voyage, he set sail for Riga, where he safely arrived ; but, after a residence of six months, found himself unaltered, and precisely in the same dreadful condition in which he had set sail. On his return, I was called in to his assistance. There were at this period but very few of those gloomy and noxious vapours of superstition, which had so tormented his mind, remaining ; but his body, and particularly his nervous system, was still racked with agonizing pains. I had the good fortune to afford him great relief ; and when, at times, his sufferings were suspended, and his spirits enlivened by pleasing conversation, he was certainly one of the most entertaining

entertaining men, both as to the vivacity of his wit, the shrewdness of his observations, the powers of his reasoning, and the solidity of his judgment, that I had ever known.

These instances clearly evince how dangerous Solitude may prove to minds pre-disposed, by accident or nature, to indulge a mis-directed imagination, either upon the common subjects of life, or upon the more important and affecting topic of religion : but it must not be concluded from the observations I have already made, that a rational Retirement from the vices, the vanities, and the vexations of the world, is equally unfriendly, under all circumstances, to a sickly mind. The cool and quiet repose which seclusion affords, is frequently the most advantageous remedy which can be adopted for the recovery of a disturbed imagination. It would, indeed, be the height of absurdity to recommend to a person suffering under a derangement of the nervous system, the diversions and dissipations of public life, when it is known, by sad experience, as well as by daily observation, that the least hurry disorders their frame, and the gentlest intercourse palpitates their hearts, and shakes their brains, almost to distraction. The healthy and robust can have no idea how violently the slightest touch vibrates through the trembling nerves of the
dejected

dejected valetudinarian. The gay and healthy, therefore, seldom sympathize with the sorrowful and the sick. This, indeed, is one reason why those who, having lost the firm and vigorous tone of mind which is so essentially necessary in the intercourses of the world, generally abandon Society, and seek in the softness of Solitude, a solace for their cares and anxieties; for there they frequently find a kind asylum, where the soul rests free from disturbance, and in time appeases the violence of its emotions: for “the foster-nurse of nature is repose.” Experience, alas! sad experience, has but too well qualified me to treat of this subject. In the fond expectation of being able to re-establish my nervous system, and to regain that health which I had broken down, and almost destroyed, by intense application, I repaired to the Circle of *Westphalia*, in order to taste the waters of *Pyrmont*, and to divert the melancholy of my mind by the company which resort to that celebrated spring: but, alas! I was unable to enjoy the lively scene; and I walked through multitudes of the great, the elegant, and the gay, in painful stupor, scarcely recognizing the features of my friends, and fearful of being noticed by those who knew me. The charms of wit, and the splendors of youthful beauty, were to me as unalluring as age and ugliness when joined to the deformities of
vice,

vice, and the fatiguing prate of senseless folly. During this miserable impotence of soul, and while I vainly sought a temporary relief of my own calamity, I was hourly assailed by a crowd of wretched souls, who implored me to afford them my professional aid, to alleviate those pains which time, alas ! had fixed in their constitutions, and which depended more on the management and reformation of their own minds than on the powers of medicine to cure. For

I could not minister to a mind diseased,
Pluck from the memory a rooted sorrow,
Raze out the written troubles of the brain,
And, with a sweet oblivious antidote,
Cleanse the stuffed bosom of that perilous stuff
Which weighed upon the heart.

To avoid these painful importunities, I flew from the tasteless scene with abrupt and angry violence ; and, confining myself to the solitude of my apartments, passed the lingering day in dreary dejection, musing on the melancholy groupe from which I had just escaped. But my home did not long afford me an asylum. I was on the ensuing day assailed by a host of hypochondriasts, attended by their respective advisers, who, while my own nervous malady was raging at its full height, stunned me with the various details of their imaginary woes, and excruciated
me

me the whole day with their unfounded ails and tormenting lamentations. The friendly approach of night at length relieved me from their importunities ; but my spirits had been so exhausted, my feelings so vexed, my patience so tired, and the sensibilities of my mind so aggravated, by the persecution I had endured, that

“ Tir’d nature’s sweet restorer, balmy sleep,”

fled from my eyes ; and I lay restless upon my couch, alive only to my miseries, in a state of anguish more insupportable than my bitterest enemies would, I hope, have inflicted on me. About noon on the ensuing day, while I was endeavouring to procure on the sofa a short repose, the Princess ORLOW, accompanied by two other very agreeable Russian ladies, whose company and conversation it was both my pride and my pleasure frequently to enjoy, suddenly entered my apartment, to enquire after my health, of the state of which they had received an account only a few hours before : but such was the petulance of temper into which my disordered mind betrayed me, that I immediately rose, and, with incivil vehemence, requested they would not disturb me. The fair intruders instantly left the room. About an hour afterwards, and while I was reflecting on the impropriety of my conduct,

duct, the Prince himself honoured me with a visit. He placed himself on a chair close by the couch on which I lay, and, with that kind affection which belongs to his character, enquired, with the tenderest and most sympathizing concern, into the cause of my disorder. There was a charm in his kindness and attention that softened, in some degree, the violence of my pains. He continued his visit for some time; and when he was about to leave me, after premising that I knew him too well to suspect that superstition had any influence in his mind, said, "Let me advise you, whenever you find yourself in so waspish and petulant a mood, as you must have been in when you turned the Princess and her companions out of the room, to endeavour to check the violence of your temper; and I think you will find it an excellent expedient for this purpose, if, while any friend is kindly enquiring after your health, however averse you may be at the moment to such an enquiry, instead of driving him so uncivilly away, you would employ yourself in a silent mental repetition of *The Lord's Prayer*, it might prove very salutary, and would certainly be much more satisfactory to your mind." No advice could be better imagined than this was to divert the emotions of impatience, by creating in the mind new objects of attention, and turning the raging current of distempered thought into a
more

more pure and peaceful channel. Experience, indeed, has enabled me to announce the efficacy and virtue of this expedient. I have frequently, by the practice of it, defeated the fury of the petulant passions, and completely subdued many of those acerbities which vex and teize us in the hours of grief, and during the sorrows of sickness. Others also, to whom I have recommended it, have experienced from it similar effects. The Prince, “my guide, philosopher, and friend,” a few weeks after he had given me this wise and salutary advice, consulted me respecting the difficulty he frequently laboured under in suppressing the violence of those transports of affection which he bore towards his young and amiable consort, and which, in a previous conversation on philosophic subjects, I had seriously exhorted him to check, under a conviction, that a steady flame is more permanent and pure than a raging fire. He asked me, with some concern, what expedient I could recommend to him as most likely to controul those emotions which happy lovers are so anxious to indulge. “My dear friend,” I replied, “there is no expedient can surpass your own; and whenever the intemperance of passion is in danger of subverting the dictates of reason, repeat *the Lord’s Prayer*, and I have no doubt you will foil its fury.”

When

When the mind is thus enabled to check and regulate the effects of the passions, and bring back the temper to its proper tone and rational bias, the serenity and calmness of SOLITUDE assists the achievement, and completes the victory. It is then so far from infusing into the mind the virulent poisons we have before described, that it affords a soft and pleasing balm to the soul; and, instead of being its greatest enemy, becomes its highest blessing, and its warmest friend.

Solitude, indeed, as I have already observed, is far from betraying well-regulated minds either into the miseries of melancholy, or the dangers of eccentricism. It raises a healthy and vigorous imagination to its noblest production, elevates it when dejected, calms it when disturbed, and restores it, when partially disordered, to its natural tone. It is, as in every other matter, whether physical or moral, the abuse of SOLITUDE which renders it dangerous: like every powerful medicine, it is attended, when misapplied, with the most mischievous consequences; but when properly administered, is pleasant in its taste, and highly salutary in its effects. He who knows how to enjoy it, can

truly tell

To live in SOLITUDE is with TRUTH to dwell;

Where

214 THE EFFECTS OF SOLITUDE, &c.

Where gay Content with healthy Temperance meets,
And Learning intermixes all its sweets ;
Where Friendship, Elegance and Arts unite
To make the hours glide social, easy, bright :
He tastes the converse of the purest mind ;
Tho' mild, yet manly ; and tho' plain, refin'd ;
And thro' the moral world expatiates wide ;
TRUTH as his end, and VIRTUE as his guide.



CHAPTER THE SIXTH.

THE INFLUENCE OF SOLITUDE ON THE
PASSIONS.

THE PASSIONS lose in Solitude a certain portion of that regulating weight by which in Society they are guided and controlled. The counteracting effects produced by variety, the restraints imposed by the obligations of civility, and the checks which arise from the calls of humanity, occur much less frequently in Retirement than amidst the multifarious transactions of a busy world. The desires and sensibilities of the heart having no real objects on which their vibrations can pendulate, are stimulated and increased by the powers of imagination. All the propensities of the soul, indeed, experience a degree of restlessness and vehemence, greater than they ever feel while diverted by the pleasures, subdued by the surrounding distresses, and engaged by the business of active and social life.

The calm which seems to accompany the mind in its retreat, is deceitful; the passions are secretly at work within the heart; the imagination is continually heaping fuel on the latent fire,

2

and

and at length the labouring desire bursts forth, and glows with volcanic heat and fury. The temporary inactivity and inertness which Retirement seems to impose, may check, but cannot subdue, the energies of spirit. The high pride and lofty ideas of great and independent minds, may be, for a while, lulled into repose; but the moment the feelings of such a character are awakened by indignity or outrage, its anger springs like an elastic body drawn from its centre, and pierces with vigorous severity the object that provoked it. The perils of Solitude, indeed, always encrease in proportion as the sensibilities, imaginations, and passions, of its votaries are quick, excursive, and violent. The man may be the inmate of a cottage, but the same passions and inclinations still lodge within his heart: *his* mansion may be changed, but *their* residence is the same; and though they appear to be silent and undisturbed, they are secretly influencing all the propensities of his heart. Whatever be the cause of his retirement, whether it be a sense of undeserved misfortune, the ingratitude of supposed friends, the pangs of despised love, or the disappointments of ambition, memory prevents the wound from healing, and stings the soul with indignation and resentment. The image of departed pleasures haunts the mind, and robs it of its wished tranquillity. The ruling passion still

subsists; it fixes itself more strongly on the fancy; moves with greater agitation; and becomes, in retirement, in proportion as it is inclined to VICE or VIRTUE, either a horrid and tormenting *spectre*, inflicting apprehension and dismay, or a delightful and supporting *angel*, irradiating the countenance with smiles of joy, and filling the heart with peace and gladness.

Blest is the man, as far as earth can bless,
Whose measur'd PASSIONS reach no wild excess;
Who, urg'd by Nature's voice, her gifts enjoys,
Nor other means than Nature's force employs.
While warm with youth the sprightly current flows,
Each vivid sense with vig'rous rapture glows;
And when he droops beneath the hand of age,
No vicious habit stings with fruitless rage;
Gradual his strength and gay sensations cease,
While joys tumultuous sink in silent peace.

The extraordinary power which the PASSIONS assume, and the improper channel in which they are apt to flow in retired situations, is conspicuous from the greater acrimony with which they are in general tainted in small villages than in large towns. It is true, indeed, that they do not always explode in such situations, with the open and daring violence which they exhibit in a metropolis; but lie buried, as it were, and smouldering in the bosom, with a more malignant

and consuming flame. To those who only observe the listlessness and languor which distinguish the characters of those who reside in small provincial towns ; the flow and uniform rotation of amusements which fills up the leisure of their lives ; the confused wildness of their cares ; the poor subterfuges to which they are continually resorting, in order to avoid the clouds of discontent that impend, in angry darkness, over their heads ; the lagging current of their drooping spirits ; the miserable poverty of their intellectual powers ; the eagerness with which they strive to raise a card party ; the transports they enjoy on the prospect of any new diversion or occasional exhibition ; the haste with which they run towards any sudden, unexpected noise, that interrupts the deep silence of their situation ; and the patient industry with which, from day to day, they watch each others conduct, and circulate reports of every action of each others lives ; will scarcely imagine that any virulence of passion can disturb the bosoms of persons who live in so quiet and seemingly composed a state. But the unoccupied time and barren minds of such characters cause the faintest emotions, and most common desires, to act with all the violence of high and untamed passions. The lowest diversions, a cock-fighting, or a poney race, make the bosom of a country 'Squire beat with the highest rapture ;

while

while the inability to attend the monthly ball, fills the minds of his wife and daughters with the keenest anguish. Circumstances which scarcely make any impression on those who reside in a metropolis, plunge every description of residents in a country village into all the extravagances of joy, or the dejections of sorrow : from the peer to the peasant, from the duchess to the dairy maid, all is rapture and convulsion. Competition is carried on for the humble honours and petty interests of a sequestered town, or miserable hamlet, with as much heat and rancour, as it is for the highest dignities and greatest emoluments of the state. Upon many occasions, indeed, ambition, envy, revenge, and all the disorderly and malignant passions, are felt and exercised with a greater degree of violence and obstinacy amidst the little contentions of clay-built cottages, than ever prevailed amidst the highest commotions of courts. PLUTARCH relates, that when CÆSAR, after his appointment to the government of *Spain*, came to a little town as he was passing the Alps, his friends, by way of mirth, took occasion to say, “ Can there here be any disputes for offices, any contentions for precedence, or such envy and ambition as we behold among the great in all the transactions of Imperial ROME ? ” The idea betrayed their ignorance of human nature ; while the celebrated reply of their great commander, that

He would rather be the first man in this little town, than the second even in the imperial city, spoke the language not of an individual, but of the species ; and instructed them that there is no place, however insignificant, in which the same passions do not proportionately prevail. The humble competitors for village honours, however low and subordinate they may be, feel as great anxiety for pre-eminence, as much jealousy of rivals, and as violent envy against superiors, as agitate the bosoms of the most ambitious statesmen, in contending for the highest prize of glory, of riches, or of power. The manner, perhaps, in which these inferior candidates exert their passions may be less artful, and the objects of them less noble, but they are certainly not less virulent. “ Having,” says EUPHELIA, who had quitted *London* to enjoy the quietude and happiness of a rural village, “ been driven by the mere necessity of escaping from absolute inactivity, to make myself more acquainted with the affairs and happiness of this place, I am now no longer an absolute stranger to *rural conversation* and employments ; but am far from discerning in them more innocence or wisdom, than in the sentiments or conduct of those with whom I have passed more cheerful and more fashionable hours. It is common to reproach the tea table and the Park, with giving opportunities and encouragement

couragement to scandal. I cannot wholly clear them from the charge ; but must, however, observe, in favour of the modish prattlers, that if not by principle, we are at least by accident, less guilty of defamation than the country ladies. For having greater numbers to observe and censure, we are commonly content to charge them only with their own faults or follies, and seldom give way to malevolence, but such as arises from injury or affront, real or imaginary, offered to ourselves. But in those distant provinces where the same families inhabit the same houses from age to age, they transmit and recount the faults of a whole succession. I have been informed how every estate in the neighbourhood was originally got, and find, if I may credit the accounts given me, that there is not a single acre in the hands of the right owner. I have been told of intrigues between beaus and toasts that have been now three centuries in their quiet graves ; and am often entertained with traditional scandal on persons of whose names there would have been no remembrance, had they not committed somewhat that might disgrace their descendants. If once there happens a quarrel between the principal persons of two families, the malignity is continued without end ; and it is common for old maids to fall out about some election in which their grandfathers were competitors. Thus

malice and hatred descend here with an inheritance; and it is necessary to be well versed in history, that the various factions of the county may be understood. You cannot expect to be on good terms with families who are resolved to love nothing in common: and, in selecting your intimates, you are, perhaps, to consider which party you most favour in the Barons' Wars."

Resentments and enmities burn with a much more furious flame amongst the thinly scattered inhabitants of a petty village, than amidst the ever varying concourse of a great metropolis. The objects by which the passions are set on fire, are hidden from our view by the tumults which prevail in a crowded city, and the bosom willingly loses the pains which such emotions excite when the causes which occasioned them are forgot: but in country villages, the thorns by which the feelings have been hurt are continually before our eyes, and preserve, on every approach towards them, a remembrance of the injuries sustained. An extremely devout and highly religious lady, who resided in a retired hamlet in *Switzerland*, once told me, in a conversation on this subject, that she had completely suppressed all indignation against the envy, the hatred, and the malice of her surrounding neighbours; for that she found they were so deeply dyed

dyed in sin, that a rational remonstrance was lost upon them ; and that the only vexations she felt from a sense of their wretchedness, arose from the idea that her soul would at the last day be obliged to keep company with such incorrigible wretches.

The inhabitants of the country, indeed, both of the lower and middling classes, cannot be expected to possess characters of a very respectable kind, when we look at the conduct of those who set them the example. A country magistrate, who has certainly great opportunities of forming the manners and morals of the district over which he presides, is in general puffed up with high and extravagant conceptions of the superiority of his wisdom, and the extent of his power ; and raising his idea of the greatness of his character in an inverse proportion to his notions of the insignificance and littleness of those around him, he sits enthroned with fancied pre-eminence, the disdainful tyrant, rather than the kind protector, of his neighbours. Deprived of all liberal and instructive society, confined in their knowledge both of men and things, the slaves of prejudice, and the pupils of folly, with contracted hearts and degraded faculties, the inhabitants of a country village feel all the base and ignoble passions, fordid rapacity, mean envy, and insulting ostentation,

more forcibly than they are felt either in the enlarged society of the metropolis, or even in the confined circle of the monastery.

The social virtues, indeed, are almost totally excluded from cloisters, as well as from every other kind of solitary institution : for when the habits, interests and pleasures of the species are pent up by any means within a narrow compass, mutual jealousies and exasperation must prevail. Every trifling immunity, petty privilege, and paltry distinction, becomes an object of the most violent contention ; and encreasing animosities at length reach to such a degree of virulence, that the pious flock is converted into a herd of famished wolves, eager to worry and devour each other.

The laws of every convent strictly enjoin the holy sisterhood to live in Christian charity and sincere affection with each other. I have, however, when attending these fair recluses in my professional character, observed many of them with wrinkles, that seemed rather the effect of angry perturbation than of peaceful age ; with aspects formed rather by envy, hatred, malice, and all uncharitableness, than by mild benevolence and singleness of heart. But I should do injustice if I did not declare, that I have seen some few who were strangers to such unworthy passions ;

passions ; whose countenances were unindented by their effects ; and whose beauty and comeliness still shone in their native lustre and simplicity. It was, indeed, painful to reflect upon the sufferings which these lovely innocents must endure, until the thoughts of their lost hopes, defeated happiness, and unmerited wrongs, should have exchanged the milky kindness of their virtuous dispositions into the gall-like bitterness of vexation and despair ; until the brightness of their charming features should be darkened by the clouds of discontent which their continued imprisonment would create ; and until their chearful and easy tempers should be perverted by the corrosions of those vindictive passions which the jealous furies with whom they were immured, and to whom they formed so striking a contrast, must in time so cruelly inflict. These lovely mourners, on entering the walls of a convent, are obliged to submit to the tyranny of an envious superior, or the jealousy of the older inmates, whose angry passions arise in proportion as they perceive others less miserable than themselves ; and retiring, at the stated periods, from their joint persecution, they find that the gloomy solitude to which they have flown, only tends to aggravate and widen the wound it was expected to cure. It is, indeed, almost impossible for any female, however amiable, to preserve in the

joyless gloom of conventual Solitude, the cheering sympathies of nature. A retrospect of her past life most probably exhibits to her tortured fancy, superstition stinging with scorpion-like severity her pious mind; love sacrificed on the altar of family pride; or fortune ruined by the avarice of a perfidious guardian; while the future presents to her view, the dreary prospect of an eternal and melancholy separation from all the enjoyments of society, and a continual exposure to the petulance and ill-humour of the dissatisfied sisterhood. What disposition, however mild and gentle by nature, can preserve itself amidst such confluent dangers? How is it possible to prevent the most amiable tenderness of heart, the most lively and sensible mind, from becoming, under such circumstances, a prey to the bitterness of affliction and malevolence? Those who have had an opportunity to observe the operation of the passions on the habits, humours, and dispositions, of recluse females, have perceived with horror the cruel and unrelenting fury with which they goad the soul, and with what an imperious and irresistible voice they command obedience to their inclination.

The passion of Love, in particular, acts with much greater force upon the mind that endeavours to escape from its effects by retirement,
than

than it does when it is either resisted or indulged.

—————Who is free from LOVE?

All space he actuates, like almighty Jove!

He haunts us waking, haunts us in our dreams;

With vigorous flight bursts thro' the cottagewindows.

If we seek shelter from his persecution

In the remotest corner of a forest,

We there elude not his pursuit; for there

With eagle wing he overtakes his prey.

Retirement, under such circumstances, is a childish expedient; it is expecting to achieve that by means of a fearful flight, which it is frequently too much for the courage and the constancy of heroes to subdue. Retirement is the very nest and arbour of this powerful passion. How many abandon the gay and jovial circles of the world, renounce even the most calm and satisfactory delights of friendship, and quit, without a sigh, the most delicious and highest seasoned pleasures of Society, to seek in Retirement the superior joys of Love! a passion in whose high and tender delights, the insolence of power, the treachery of friendship, and the most vindictive malice, is immediately forgot. It is a passion, when pure, that can never experience the least decay; no course of time, no change of place, no alteration of circumstances, can erase or lessen the ideas of that bliss which it has once im-

printed on the heart. Its characters are indelible. Solitude, in its most charming state, and surrounded by its amplest powers, affords no resource against its anxieties, its jealous fears, its tender alarms, its soft sorrows, or its inspiringly tumultuous joys. The bosom that is once deeply wounded by the barbed dart of real love, seldom recovers its tranquillity, but enjoys, if happy, the highest of human delights; and, if miserable, the deepest of human torments. But, although the love-sick shepherd fills the lonely vallies, and the verdant groves, with the softest sighs or severest sorrows, and the cells of the monasteries and convents resound with heavy groans, and deep-toned curses, against the malignity of this passion, SOLITUDE may, perhaps, for a while suspend, if it cannot extinguish its fury. Of the truth of this observation, the history of those unfortunate but real lovers, ABE-LARD and ELOISA, furnish a memorable instance.

In the twelfth century, and while *Louis the Gross* filled the throne of France, was born in the retired village of *Palais*, in *Brittany*, the celebrated PETER ABELARD. Nature had lavished the highest perfections both on his person and his mind: a liberal education improved to their utmost possible extent the gifts of nature; and he became, in a few years, the most learned, elegant

elegant and polite gentleman of his age and country. Philosophy and divinity were his favourite studies ; and lest the affairs of the world should prevent him from becoming a proficient in them, he surrendered his birth-right to his younger brethren, and travelled to *Paris*, in order to cultivate his mind under that great professor WILLIAM DES CHAMPEAUX. The eminence he attained as a professor, while it procured him the esteem of the rational and discerning, excited the envy of his rivals. But, besides his uncommon merit as a scholar, he possessed a greatness of soul which nothing could subdue. He looked upon riches and grandeur with contempt ; and his only ambition was to render his name famous among learned men, and to acquire the reputation of the greatest doctor of his age. But when he had attained his seven-and-twentieth year of age, all his philosophy could not guard him against the shafts of Love. Not far from the place where ABELARD read his lectures, lived a canon of the church of *Notre Dame*, named FULBERT, whose niece, the celebrated ELOISA, had been educated under his own eye with the greatest care and attention. Her person was well proportioned, her features regular, her eyes sparkling, her lips vermilion and well formed, her complexion animated, her air fine, and her aspect sweet and agreeable. She possessed

possessed a surprizing quickness of wit, an incredible memory, and a considerable share of learning, joined with great humility and tenderness of disposition: and all these accomplishments were attended with something so graceful and moving, that it was impossible for those who saw her not to love her. The eye of ABELARD was charmed, and his whole soul intoxicated, with the passion of Love, the moment he beheld and conversed with this extraordinary woman; and he laid aside all other engagements to attend to his passion. He was deaf to the calls both of reason and philosophy, and thought of nothing but her company and conversation. An opportunity fortunate for his love, but fatal to his happiness, soon occurred. FULBERT, whose affection for his niece was unbounded, willing to improve to the highest degree, the excellency of those talents which nature had so bountifully bestowed on her, engaged ABELARD as her preceptor, and received him in that character into his house. A mutual passion strongly infused itself into the hearts of both pupil and preceptor. She consented to become his mistress, but for a long time refused to become his wife. The secret of their loves could not remain long concealed from the eyes of FULBERT, and the lover was dismissed from his house; but ELOISA flew with rapture to his arms, and was placed under the protection

tection of his sister, where she remained until, from the cruel vengeance which her uncle exercised on the unfortunate ABELARD, she was induced, at his request, to enter into the convent of ARGENTEUIL, and he into the monastery of ST. GILDAS.* In this cloister, the base of which

* The retreat of ABELARD, after ELOISA had generously quitted the world, and renounced all those pleasures she might reasonably have promised herself, in obedience to her husband's request, and to procure him that peace of mind which he said he could not otherwise reasonably hope for, was first to the monastery of *St. Dennis*; from whence, by permission of the abbot, he retired to *Thebaud*, in *Champain*, where he established a school, and taught philosophy with great reputation and success. But being accused of heresies in some of his theological writings, and driven from his retirement, he sought a dreary solitude in the diocese of *Troies*, where the bishop, pitying his misfortunes, gave him a piece of ground, upon which he erected a religious house, which he named THE PARACLETE, or the *Comforter*. Persecution, however, still followed him into this wilderness; and he was treated with so much bitterness, that he resolved to leave Christendom. But the Duke of Brittany, to prevent the exile of so learned and renowned a philosopher, named him to the abbey of *St. Gildas*, in the diocese of *Vannes*, at the desire of the monks, who had already elected him for their Superior. ELOISA, who was at this time prioress of the priory of *Argenteuil*, being discontented at the misconduct of her nuns, was removed by ABELARD TO THE PARACLETE, at which place a nunnery was founded by Innocent the Second, in the year 1131, and of which she was the first abbess. In this retreat she survived ABELARD twenty years. ABELARD died in the priory of *St. Marcel* upon the *Soane*, near *Chalons*, on the 21st of April, 1142, in the sixty-third year of his age. His corpse

which was washed by the waves of a sea less turbulent than the passions which disturbed his soul, the unfortunate ABELARD endeavoured, by the exercises of religion and study, to obliterate all remembrance of his love ; but his virtue was too feeble for the great attempt. A course of many years, however, had passed in penitence and mortification, without any communication between them, and further time might possibly have calmed in a still greater degree the violence of their feelings ; but a letter which ABELARD wrote to his friend PHILINTUS, in order to comfort him under some affliction which had befallen him, in which he related his affection for ELOISA with great tenderness, fell into her hands, and induced her to break through the silence which had so long prevailed, by writing him a letter, the contents of which revived in his mind all the former furies of his passion. Time, absence, solitude, and prayer, had in no degree diminished the amiable tenderness of the still lovely ELOISA, or augmented the fortitude of the unfortunate ABELARD. The composing influence of religion seems to have made an earlier impression upon his feelings than it did upon those of ELOISA ; but he continually counter-acted

corpse was sent to the chapel of THE PARACLETE to ELOISA to be interred, according to her former request to him, and in pursuance of his own desire.

acted its effects, by comparing his former felicity with his present torments ; and he answered ELOISA's letter not as a moral preceptor, or holy confessor, but as a still fond and adoring lover ; as a man whose wounded feelings were in some degree alleviated by a recollection of his former joys ; and who could only console the sorrows of his mistress, by avowing an equal tenderness, and confessing the anguish with which their separation rent his soul. The walls of PARACLETE resounded his sighs less frequently, and re-echoed less fervently with his sorrows, than those of *St. Gildas* ; for his continued solitude, so far from affording him relief, had administered an aggravating medicine to his disease ; and afforded that vulture, Grief, greater leisure to tear and prey upon his disordered heart. “ Religion,” says he, “ commands me to pursue
“ VIRTUE, since I have nothing to hope for
“ from LOVE ; but Love still asserts its domi-
“ nion in my fancy, and entertains itself with
“ past pleasures. Memory supplies the place of
“ a mistress. Piety and duty are not always the
“ fruits of Retirement. Even in deserts, when
“ the dew of heaven falls not on us, we love
“ what we ought no longer to love. The Pas-
“ sions, stirred up by Solitude, fill those regions
“ of death and silence ; and it is very seldom
“ that

“ that what ought to be is truly followed there,
 “ and that God only is loved and served.”

The letters of ELOISA were soft, gentle, and endearing; but they breathed the warmest language of tenderness and unconquerable passion. “ I have your picture,” says she, “ in my room. “ I never pass by it without stopping to look at “ it; and yet when you were present with me, “ I scarce even cast my eyes upon it. If a pic- “ ture, which is but a mute representation of “ an object, can give such pleasure, what can- “ not letters inspire! Letters have souls; they “ have in them all that force which expresses “ the transports of the heart: they have all the “ fire of our passions; they can raise them as “ much as if the persons themselves were pre- “ sent: they have all the softness and delicacy “ of speech, and sometimes a boldness of expres- “ sion even beyond it. We may write to each “ other; so innocent a pleasure is not forbidden “ us. Let us not lose, through negligence, the “ only happiness which is left to us, and the “ only one, perhaps, which the malice of our “ enemies can never ravish from us. I shall “ read that you are my husband, and you shall “ see me address you as a wife. In spite of all “ your misfortunes, you may be what you “ please in your letters. Letters were first in-
 “ vented

“ vented for comforting such solitary wretches
 “ as myself.* Having lost the pleasure of see-
 “ ing you, I shall compensate this loss by the
 “ satisfaction I shall find in your writings: There
 “ I shall read your most secret thoughts; I
 “ shall carry them always about me; I shall
 “ kiss them every moment. If you can be ca-
 “ pable of jealousy, let it be for the fond curio-
 “ sity I shall bestow on your letters, and envy
 “ only the happiness of those rivals. That
 “ writing may be no trouble to you, write al-
 “ ways to me carelessly, and without study:
 “ I had rather read the dictates of the heart
 “ than of the brain. I cannot live, if you
 “ do not tell me you always love me. You
 “ cannot but remember (for what do not lovers
 “ remember?) with what pleasure I have passed
 “ whole days in hearing you discourse; how,
 “ when you was absent, I shut myself up from
 “ every

* The reader will recollect how elegantly and happily this
 thought has been expressed by Mr. POPE in his celebrated
 Epistle from ELOISA to ABELARD.

Heaven first taught letters for some wretch's aid,
 Some banish'd lover, or some captive maid:
 They live, they speak, they breathe what love inspires,
 Warm from the soul, and faithful to its fires;
 The virgin's wish, without her fears, impart;
 Excuse the blush, and pour out all the heart;
 Speed the soft intercourse from soul to soul,
 And waft a sigh from Indus to the pole.

“ every one to write to you ; how uneasy I was
 “ till my letter had come to your hands ; what
 “ artful management was required to engage con-
 “ fidants. This detail, perhaps, surprises you,
 “ and you are in pain for what will follow :
 “ But I am no longer ashamed that my passion
 “ has had no bounds for you ; for I have done
 “ more than all this ; I have hated myself, that
 “ I might love you. I came hither to bury my-
 “ self in a perpetual imprisonment, that I might
 “ make you live quiet and easy. Nothing but
 “ virtue, joined to a love perfectly disengaged
 “ from the commerce of the senses, could have
 “ produced such effects. Vice never inspires
 “ any thing like this. How did I deceive my-
 “ self with the hopes that you would be wholly
 “ mine when I took the veil, and engaged my-
 “ self to live for ever under your laws ! For in
 “ being professed, I vowed no more than to be
 “ yours only ; and I obliged myself voluntarily
 “ to a confinement in which you denied to place
 “ me. Death only then can make me leave the
 “ place where you have fixed me ; and then too
 “ my ashes shall rest here, and wait for yours,
 “ in order to shew my obedience and devotedness
 “ to you to the latest moment possible.”

ABELARD, while he strove, in his reply, to
 adhere to the dictates of reason, betrayed the
 lurking

lurking tenderness of his heart. “ Deliver your-
“ self, ELOISA,” says he, “ from the shameful
“ remains of a passion which has taken too deep
“ root. Remember that the least thought for
“ any other than God is an adultery. If you
“ could see me here, pale, meagre, melancholy
“ surrounded by a band of persecuting monks,
“ who feel my reputation for learning as a
“ reproach of their stupidity and ignorance, my
“ emaciated figure as a slander on their gross
“ and sensual corpulency, and my prayers as an
“ example for their reformation, what would
“ you say to the unmanly sighs, and unavailing
“ tears, by which they are deceived ! Alas ! I
“ am bowed down by the oppressive weight
“ of Love rather than by the contrition for past
“ offences. Oh ! my ELOISA, pity me, and
“ endeavour to free my labouring soul from its
“ captivity. If your vocation be, as you say,
“ my wish, deprive me not of the merit of it
“ by your continual inquietudes : tell me that
“ you will honour the habit which covers you
“ by an inward retirement. Fear God, that
“ you may be delivered from your frailties.
“ Love him, if you would advance in virtue.
“ Be not uneasy in the cloister, for it is the
“ dwelling of saints ; embrace your bands, they
“ are the chains of JESUS ; and he will lighten
“ them, and bear them with you, if you bear
“ them

“ them with humility and repentance. Con-
 “ sider me no more, I entreat you, as a founder,
 “ or as a person in any way deserving of esteem;
 “ for your encomiums do but ill agree with the
 “ multiplying weaknesses of my heart. I am
 “ a miserable sinner, prostrate before my Judge;
 “ and when the rays of grace break on my trou-
 “ bled soul, I press the earth with my lips, and
 “ mingle my sighs and tears in the dust. Couldst
 “ thou survey thy wretched lover thus lost and
 “ forlorn, thou wouldst no longer solicit his af-
 “ fection. The tenderness of thy heart would
 “ not permit thee to interpose an earthly passion,
 “ which can only tend to deprive him of all
 “ hopes of heavenly grace and future comfort.
 “ Thou wouldst not wish to be the object of
 “ sighs and tears, which ought to be directed
 “ to God alone. Canst thou, my ELOISA, be-
 “ come the confederate of my evil genius, and
 “ be the instrument to promote Sin’s yet un-
 “ finished conquest? What, alas! couldst thou
 “ not achieve with a heart the weaknesses of
 “ which you so well know? But, oh! let me
 “ conjure you, by all the sacred ties, to forget
 “ for ever the wretched ABELARD, and thereby
 “ contribute to his salvation. Let me entreat
 “ you, by our former joys, and by our now
 “ common misfortunes, not to abet my destruc-
 “ tion. The highest affection you can now
 “ shew

“ shew me, is to hide your tenderness from my
 “ view, and to renounce me for ever. Oh !
 “ ELOISA, be devoted to GOD alone ; for I here
 “ release you from all engagements to me.”

The conflict between LOVE and RELIGION
 tore the soul of ELOISA with pangs far more
 violent and destructive. There is scarcely a
 line of her reply to ABELARD, that does not
 shew the dangerous influence which Solitude had
 given to the concealed but unsmothered passion
 that glowed within her breast. “ Veiled as I
 “ am,” she exclaims, “ behold in what a dis-
 “ order you have plunged me ! How difficult is
 “ it to fight always for duty against inclination !
 “ I know the obligation which this sacred veil
 “ has imposed on me ; but I feel more strongly
 “ the power which a long and habitual passion
 “ has gained over my heart. I am the victim of
 “ almighty Love : my passion troubles my
 “ mind, and disorders my senses. My soul is
 “ sometimes influenced by the sentiments of
 “ piety which my reflections inspire, but the
 “ next moment I yield myself up to the tender-
 “ ness of my feelings, and to the suggestions of
 “ my affection. My imagination riots with
 “ wild excursion in the scenes of past delights. I
 “ disclose to you one moment what I would not
 “ have told you a moment before. I resolve no
 “ longer

“ longer to love you ; I consider the solemnity
 “ of the vow I have made, and the awfulness of
 “ the veil I have taken ; but there arises un-
 “ expectedly from the bottom of my heart, a
 “ passion which triumphs over all these notions
 “ and while it darkens my reason, destroys my
 “ devotion. You reign in all the close and in-
 “ ward retreats of my soul ; and I know not
 “ how nor where to attack you with any prospect
 “ of success. When I endeavour to break the
 “ chains which bind me so closely to you, I
 “ only deceive myself, and all my efforts serve
 “ only to confirm my captivity, and to rivet
 “ our hearts more firmly to each other. Oh !
 “ for Pity’s sake comply with my request ; and
 “ endeavour, by this means, to make me re-
 “ nounce my desires, by shewing me the obliga-
 “ tion I am under to renounce you. If you
 “ are still a lover, or a father, oh ! help a mis-
 “ tress, and give comfort to the distraction of
 “ an afflicted child. Surely these dear and
 “ tender names will excite the emotion either
 “ of pity or of love. Gratify my request ;
 “ only continue to write to me ; and I shall
 “ continue to perform the hard duties of my
 “ station, without profaning that character
 “ which my love for you induced me to assume.
 “ Under your advice and admonition I shall wil-
 “ lingly humble myself, and submit with peni-
 “ tence

“ tence and resignation to the wonderful pro-
 “ vidence of GOD, who does all things for our
 “ sanctification ; who, by his grace, purifies all
 “ that is vicious and corrupt in our natures ;
 “ and by the inconceivable riches of his mercy,
 “ draws us to himself against our wishes, and
 “ by degrees opens our eyes to discern the great-
 “ nefs of that bounty which at first we are inca-
 “ pable of understanding. Virtue is too amiable
 “ not to be embraced when you reveal her
 “ charms, and Vice too hideous not to be avoid-
 “ ed when you shew her deformities. When
 “ you are pleased, every thing seems lovely to
 “ me. Nothing is frightful or difficult when
 “ you are by. I am only weak when I am
 “ alone, and unsupported by you ; and therefore
 “ it depends on you alone that I may be such as
 “ you desire. Oh ! that you had not so power-
 “ ful an influence over all my soul ! It is your
 “ fears surely that make you thus deaf to my
 “ entreaties, and negligent of my desires : but
 “ what is there for you to fear ?* When we
 “ lived happily together, you might have doubt-
 “ ed whether it was pleasure or affection that
 “ united me to you ; but the place from which I

VOL. II.

M

“ now

* Come, ABELARD, for what hast thou to dread ?

The torch of Venus burns not for the dead.

Nature stands check'd ; Religion disapproves ;

E'en thou art cold—yet ELOISA loves.

“ now indite my lamentations, must have re-
 “ moved that idea, if it ever could find a place
 “ in your mind. Even within these gloomy
 “ walls, my heart springs towards you with
 “ more affection than it felt, if possible, in the
 “ gay and glittering world. Had Pleasure been
 “ my guide, the world would have been the
 “ theatre of my joys. Two-and-twenty years
 “ only of my life had worn away, when the
 “ lover on whom my soul doated was cruelly
 “ torn from my arms ; and at that age female
 “ charms are not generally despised ; but, in-
 “ stead of seeking to indulge the pleasures of
 “ youth, your ELOISA, when deprived of thee,
 “ renounced the world, suppressed the emotions
 “ of sense at a time when the pulses beat
 “ with the warmest ardour, and buried herself
 “ within the cold and cheerless region of the
 “ cloister. To you she consecrated the flower
 “ of her charms ; to you she now devotes the
 “ poor remains of faded beauty ; and dedicates
 “ to heaven and to you, her tedious days, and
 “ widowed nights, in solitude and sorrow.”

The passion, alas ! which ELOISA thus fondly
 nourished in her bosom like an adder, to goad
 and sting her peace of mind, was very little of
 a spiritual nature ; and the walls of PARACLETE
 only re-echoed more fervent sighs than she had
 before

before breathed, and witnessed a more abundant flow of tears than she had shed, in the cells of ARGENTEUIL, over the memory of departed joys with her beloved ABELARD. Her letters, indeed, shew with what toilsome but ineffectual anxiety she endeavoured to chasten her mind, and support her fainting virtue, as well by her own reasoning and reflection, as by his counsels and exhortations ; but the passion had tenaciously rooted itself at the very bottom of her heart ; and it was not until the close of life, that she was able to repress the transports of her imagination, and subdue the wild sallies of her fond and fertile fancy. Personally separated from each other, she indulged a notion that her love could not be otherwise than pure and spiritual ; but there are many parts of her letters which shew how much she was deceived by this idea ;* for, in all the

M 2

fancied

* These parts of her letters, which cannot well be translated into prose, without using expressions and ideas that might offend the feelings of delicacy, have been thus elegantly rendered in poetry by Mr. POPE.

“ Ah ! hopeless, lasting flames ! like those that burn
To light the dead, and warm the unfruitful urn.
What scenes appear where'er I turn my view !
The dear ideas, when I fly, pursue ;
Rise in the grove, before the altar rise ;
Stain all my soul, and wanton in my eyes.
I waste the matin lamp in sighs for thee ;
Thy image steals between my God and me :

Thy

fancied chastity of their tender and too ardent loves,

“ Back thro’ the pleasing maze of SENSE she ran,
 “ And felt within the slave of LOVE and MAN.”

The wild and extravagant excess to which the fancy and the feelings of ELOISA were carried, was not occasioned merely by the warm impulses of unchecked nature ; but were forced, to the injury of Virtue, and the destruction of Reason, by the rank hot-bed of MONASTIC SOLITUDE. The story of these celebrated lovers, when

Thy voice I seem in every hymn to hear;
 With every bead I drop too soft a tear.
 When from the censor clouds of fragrance roll,
 And swelling organs lift the rising soul,
 One thought of thee puts all the pomp to flight;
 Priests, tapers, temples, swim before my sight:
 In seas of flame my plunging soul is drown’d,
 While altars blaze, and angels tremble round;
 While prostrate here in humble grief I lie,
 Kind virtuous drops just gathering in my eye;
 While praying, trembling in the dust I roll,
 And dawning grace is opening on my soul:
 Come, if thou dar’st, all charming as thou art,
 Oppose thyself to heaven; dispute my heart:
 Come, with one glance of those deluding eyes,
 Blot out each bright idea of the skies:
 Take back that grace, those sorrows, and those tears;
 Take back my fruitless penitence and prayers;
 Snatch me just mounting to the bless’d abode;
 Assist the fiends, and tear me from my God.

when calmly examined, and properly understood, proves how dangerous it is to recede entirely from the pleasures and occupations of social life, and how deeply the imagination may be corrupted, and the passions inflamed, during a splenetic and ill-prepared Retirement from the world. The frenzies which follow disappointed love, are of all others the most likely to settle into habits of the deepest melancholy. The finest sensibilities of the heart, the purest tenderness of the soul, when joined with a warm constitution, and an ardent imagination, experience from interruption and controul, the highest possible state of exasperation. Solitude confirms the feelings such a situation creates: and the passions and inclinations of a person, labouring under such impressions, are more likely to be corrupted and inflamed by the leisure of retirement, than they would be even by engaging in all the lazy opulence and wanton plenty of a debauched metropolis.*

M 3

The

* "MAN," says my LORD SHAFTSBURY, "is, of all other creatures, the least able to bear SOLITUDE. Nor is any thing more apparent, than that there is naturally in every man such a degree of social affection, as inclines him to seek the familiarity and friendship of his fellows. It is here that he lets loose a passion, and gives reins to a desire, which can hardly, by any struggle, or inward violence, be withheld: or if it be, is sure to create a sadness, dejection and melancholy in the mind ;

The affection which PETRARCH entertained for LAURA, was refined, elevated, and virtuous, and differed in almost every ingredient of it from the luxurious fondness of the unfortunate ELOISA; but circumstances separated him from the beloved object; and he laboured, during many years of his life, under the oppression of that grievous melancholy which disappointment uniformly inflicts. He first beheld her as she was going to the church of the monastery of *St. Claire*. She was dressed in green, and her gown was embroidered with violets. Her face, her air, her gait, were something more than mortal. Her person was delicate, her eyes tender and sparkling, and her eye-brows black as ebony. Golden locks waved over her shoulders, whiter than snow, and the ringlets were woven by the fingers of Love. Her neck was well formed, and her complexion animated by the tints of Nature, which Art vainly attempts to imitate.

mind: for whoever is unfociable, and voluntarily shuns society, or commerce with the world, must of necessity be morose and ill-natured. He, on the other side, who is withheld by force or accident, finds in his temper the ill effects of this restraint. The inclination, when suppressed, breeds discontent; and, on the contrary, affords a healing and enlivening joy, when acting at its full liberty, and with full scope; as we may see particularly, when, after a long time of SOLITUDE and long absence, the heart is opened, the mind disburthened, and the secrets of the soul unfolded to a bosom friend."

imitate. When she opened her mouth, you perceived the beauty of pearls, and the sweetness of roses. She was full of graces. Nothing was so soft as her looks ; so modest as her carriage ; so touching as the sound of her voice. An air of gaiety and tenderness breathed around her ; but so pure and happily tempered, as to inspire every beholder with the sentiments of virtue ; for she was chaste as the spangled dew-drop on the thorn. Such was the description given of this divine creature by her enslaved lover. But, unfortunately for his happiness, she was at this time married to *Hugues de Sade*, whose family was originally of *Avignon*, and held the first offices there. Notwithstanding the sufferings he underwent from the natural agitation of an affection so tender as that which now engrossed his soul, he owns that LAURA behaved to him with kindness so long as he concealed his passion ; but when she discovered that he was captivated with her charms, she treated him with great severity ; avoiding every place it was likely he would frequent, and concealing her face under a large veil whenever they accidentally met. The whole soul of PETRARCH was overthrown by this disastrous passion ; and he felt all the visitation of unfortunate love as grievously as if it had been founded upon less virtuous principles. He endeavoured to calm and tranquillize the

troubles of his breast by retiring to the celebrated solitude of *Vaucluse*, a place in which nature delighted to appear under a form the most singular and romantic: "But, alas!" says he, "I knew
 " not what I was doing. The resource was ill
 " suited to the safety I sought. Solitude was
 " incapable of mitigating the severity of my
 " sorrows. The griefs that hung around my
 " heart, consumed me like a devouring flame.
 " I had no means of flying from their attacks.
 " I was alone, without consolation, and in the
 " deepest distress, without even the counsel of a
 " friend to assist me. Melancholy and Despair
 " shot their poisoned arrows against my defence-
 " less breast, and I filled the un soothing and ro-
 " mantic vale with my sighs and lamentations.
 " The Muse, indeed, conveyed my sufferings
 " to the world; but while the Poet was praised,
 " the unhappy Lover remained unpitied and for-
 " lorn."

The love which inspired the lays of PETRARCH, was a pure and perfect passion of the heart; and his sufferings were rendered peculiarly poignant by a melancholy sense of the impossibility of ever being united with the object of it: But the love of ABELARD and ELOISA was a furious heat of wild desire. This passion flows clear or muddied, peaceful or violent, in proportion to the sources from
 which

which it springs. When it arises from pure and unpolluted sources, its stream is clear, peaceful, and surrounded with delights; but when its source is foul, and its course improperly directed, it foams and rages, overflows its banks, and destroys the scenes which nature intended it to fertilize and adorn. The different effects produced by the different kinds of this powerful passion, have, on observing how differently the character of the same person appears when influenced by the one or the other of them, given rise to an idea that the human species are possessed of two souls; the one leading to VICE, and the other conducting to VIRTUE. A celebrated philosopher has illustrated this notion by the following story.

A virtuous young prince, of an heroic soul, capable of love and friendship, made war upon a tyrant, who was in every respect his reverse. It was the happiness of our prince to be as great a conqueror by his clemency and bounty, as by his arms and military virtue. Already he had won over to his party several potentates and princes, who before had been subject to the tyrant. Among those who still adhered to the enemy, there was a prince who, having all the advantages of person and merit, had lately been made happy in the possession and mutual love of

the most beautiful princess in the world. It happened that the occasion of the war called the new-married prince to a distance from his beloved princess. He left her secure, as he thought, in a strong castle, far within the country ; but, in his absence, the place was taken by surprize, and the princess brought a captive to the quarters of the heroic prince. There was in the camp a young nobleman, the favourite of the prince ; one who had been educated with him, and was still treated by him with perfect familiarity. Him he immediately sent for, and, with strict injunctions, committed the captive princess to his charge ; resolving she should be treated with that respect which was due to her rank and merit. It was the same young lord who had discovered her disguised among the prisoners, and learnt her story ; the particulars of which he now related to the prince. He spoke in extacy on this occasion ; telling the prince how beautiful she appeared even in the midst of sorrow ; and though disguised under the meanest habit, yet how distinguished by her air and manner from every other beauty of her sex. But what appeared strange to our young nobleman was, that the prince, during this whole relation, discovered not the least intention of seeing the lady, or satisfying that curiosity which seemed so natural on such an occasion. He pressed him, but without

out

out success. “Not see her, Sir!” said he, wondering, “when she is so much handsomer than any woman you have yet seen!” “For that very reason,” replied the prince, “I would rather decline the interview; for should I, upon this bare report of her beauty, be so charmed as to make the first visit at this urgent time of business, I may, upon sight, with better reason, be induced, perhaps, to visit her when I am more at leisure; and so again and again, until at last I may have no leisure left for my affairs.” “Would you, Sir, persuade me then,” said the young nobleman, smiling, “that a fair face can have such power as to force the will itself, and constrain a man in any respect to act contrary to what he thinks becoming him? Are we to hearken to the poets, in what they tell us of that incendiary Love and his irresistible flames? A real flame we see burns all alike; but that imaginary one of beauty hurts only those that are consenting. It affects no otherwise than as we ourselves are pleased to allow it. In many cases we absolutely command it, as when relation and consanguinity are in the nearest degree. Authority and law we see can master it; but it would be vain, as well as unjust, for any law to intermeddle or prescribe, was not the case voluntary, and our will entirely free.” “How comes it then,” replied the prince, “that, if we are

thus masters of our choice, and free at first to admire and love where we approve, we cannot afterwards as well cease to love whenever we see cause? This latter liberty you will hardly defend; for I doubt not you have heard of many who, though they were used to set the highest value on liberty before they loved, yet, afterwards, were necessitated to serve in the most abject manner, finding themselves constrained, and bound by a stronger chain than any of iron or of adamant." "Such wretches," replied the youth, "I have often heard complain, who, if you will believe them, are wretched indeed, without means or power to help themselves. You may hear them in the same manner complain grievously of life itself; but, though there are doors enough at which to go out of life, they find it convenient to keep still where they are. They are the very same pretenders who, through this plea of irresistible necessity, make bold with what is another's, and attempt unlawful beds: but the law, I perceive, makes bold with them in its turn, as with other invaders of property. Neither is it your custom, Sir, to pardon such offences. So that beauty itself, you must allow, is innocent and harmless, and cannot compel any one to do amiss. The debauched compel themselves, and unjustly charge their guilt on LOVE. They who are honest and just, can admire and love whatever is beautiful, without offering at
any

any thing beyond what is allowed. How then is it possible, Sir, that one of your virtue should be in pain on any such account, or fear such a temptation? You see, Sir, I am sound and whole, after having beheld the princess. I have conversed with her; I have admired her in the highest degree; yet I am myself still, and in my duty, and shall be ever in the same manner at your command." "It is well," replied the Prince; "keep yourself so: be ever the same man; and look to your fair charge carefully, as becomes you; for it may so happen, in the present situation of the war, that this beautiful captive may stand us in good stead." The young nobleman then departed to execute his commission; and immediately took such care of the captive princess, that she seemed as perfectly obeyed, and had every thing which belonged to her in as great splendor, as in her own principality, and in the height of her fortune. He found her in every respect deserving, and saw in her a generosity of soul exceeding even her other charms. His studies to oblige her, and to soften her distress, made her, in return, desirous to express her gratitude. He soon discovered the feelings of her mind; for she shewed, on every occasion, a real concern for his interest; and when he happened to fall ill, she took such tender care of him herself, and by her servants, that he seemed

seemed to owe his recovery entirely to her friendship. From these beginnings insensibly, and by natural degrees, as may easily be conceived, the youth fell desperately in love. At first he offered not to make the least mention of his passion to the princess, for he scarce dared to believe it himself. But time, and the encreasing ardour of his passion, subdued his fears, and she received his declaration with an unaffected trouble, and real concern. She reasoned with him as a friend, and endeavoured to persuade him to subdue so improper and extravagant a flame. But in a short time he became outrageous, and talked to her of *force*. The princess was alarmed by his audacity, and immediately sent to the prince to implore his protection. The prince received the information with the appearance of a more than ordinary attention; sent instantly for one of his first ministers, and directed him to return with the princess's domestic, and tell the young nobleman, that *force* was not to be used with such a lady; but that he might use *persuasion*, if he thought it was proper so to do. The minister, who was of course the inveterate enemy of his prince's favourite, aggravated the message, inveighed publicly against the young nobleman for the grossness of his misconduct, and even reproached him to his face, with having been a traitor to the confidence of his prince, and a disgrace to his nation. The minister,

nister, in short, conveyed the message of his master in such virulent and angry terms, that the youth looked on his case as desperate ; fell into the deepest melancholy ; and prepared himself for that fate which he was conscious he well deserved. While he was thus impressed with a sense of his misconduct, and the danger to which it had exposed him, the prince commanded him to attend a private audience. The youth entered the closet of the Prince covered with the deepest confusion. “ I find,” said he, “ that I am now become dreadful to you indeed, since you can neither see me without shame, nor imagine me to be without resentment. But away with all these thoughts from this time forwards. I know how much you have suffered on this occasion. I know the power of Love ; and am no otherways safe myself, than by keeping out of the way of Beauty. I alone am to blame ; for it was I who unhappily matched you with that unequal adversary ; who gave you that impracticable task ; who imposed on you that hard adventure, which no one yet was ever strong enough to accomplish.” “ In this, Sir, as in all else,” replied the youth, “ you express that goodness which is so natural to you. You have compassion, and can allow for human frailties ; but the rest of mankind will never cease to upbraid me ; nor shall I ever be forgiven, even
were

were I able ever to forgive myself. I am reproached by my nearest friends ; and I must be odious to all mankind wherever I am known. The least punishment I can think due to me, is banishment for ever from your presence ; for I am no longer worthy of being called your friend.” “ You must not think of banishing yourself for ever,” replied the prince : “ but trust me, if you will retire only for a while, I shall so order matters, that you shall return with the applause even of those who are now your enemies, when they find what a considerable service you shall have rendered both to them and me.” Such a hint was sufficient to revive the spirits of the despairing youth. He was transported to think that his misfortunes could be turned in any way to the advantage of his prince. He entered with joy into the scheme his royal friend had contrived for the purpose of restoring him to his former fame and happiness, and appeared eager to depart, and execute the directions that were given to him. “ Can you then,” said the prince, “ resolve to quit the charming princess ?” “ Oh, Sir,” replied the youth, with tears in his eyes, “ I am now well satisfied that I have in reality within me two distinct separate souls. This lesson of philosophy I have learnt from that villainous sophister LOVE ; for it is impossible to believe that, having one and the same soul,

soul, it should be actually both GOOD and BAD, passionate for VIRTUE and VICE, desirous of contraries. No; there must of necessity be two; and when the Good Soul prevails, we are happy; but when the Bad prevails, then we are miserable. Such was my case. Lately the Ill Soul was wholly master, and I was miserable; but now the Good prevails, by your assistance, and I am plainly a new creature, with quite another apprehension, another reason, and another will."

He who would be master of his appetites, must not only avoid temptation, but vigilantly restrain the earliest shoots of fancy, and destroy the first blooms of a warm imagination. It is the very nature of confidence to be always in danger. To permit the mind to riot in scenes of fancied delights, under an idea that reason will be able to extinguish the flames of desire, is to nurse and foster the sensual appetites, which, when guided by the cool and temperate voice of Nature alone, are seldom raised to an improper height. The natural current of the blood, even in the warmest constitutions, and under the most torrid zone, would keep an even temperate course, were it not accelerated by such incentives. Youth, indeed, despises this species of reasoning, and imputes it to the sickness of satiety, or the coldness

coldness of old age. I have, however, in general, observed, that those who seek these incitements to what they improperly call LOVE, possess a rayless eye, a hollow cheek, a palsied hand, a pallid countenance; and these symptoms of faded splendor, and withered strength, unquestionably prove that they have not consulted NATURE in their gay pursuits; for Nature has not planted any propensities in the human frame, which lead it to early ruin, or premature decay. The blame which is so unjustly thrown upon temperament and constitution, belongs to the indulgence of false and clamorous passions, those which sensual fancies, and lascivious ideas, have raised to the destruction of chastity and health.

MONASTIC INSTITUTIONS produce in this respect incalculable mischiefs. The sexes, whom these religious prisons seclude from the free and unconfined intercourses of Society, suffer their imaginations to riot without restraint or discipline, in proportion to the violence imposed on their actions. A thousand boyish fancies, eager appetites, and warm desires, are perpetually playing truant, and the chastity of the soul is corrupted. To effect the conquest of the passion of LOVE, it is absolutely necessary that the evil suggestions of the imagination should be first silenced; and he who succeeds in quelling the insurrections

rections of that turbulent inmate, or in quieting its commotions, achieves an enterprize at once difficult and glorious. The holy JEROME checked the progress of many disorderly passions which he found rising in his breast; but the passion of Love resisted all his opposition, and followed him, with encreasing fury, even into the frightful cavern, to which he retired to implore, in humble prayer and solitary abstraction, the mercies of his God. The Solitude, however remote, to which the demon of sensuality is admitted, is soon crowded with legions of tormenting fiends. JOHN, the anchorite of the deserts of *Thebais*, wisely addresses his solitary brethren, “ If there be any among you who in his pride
“ conceives that he has entirely renounced the
“ devil and his works, he should learn that
“ it is not sufficient to have done this merely by
“ his lips, by having resigned his worldly dignities, and by dividing his possessions among
“ the poor; for unless he has also abandoned
“ his sensual appetites, his salvation cannot be secure. It is only by purifying our
“ bosoms from the pernicious influence of this
“ master passion, that we can ever hope to counteract the machinations of Satan, and to guard
“ our hearts from his dangerous practices. Sin
“ always introduces itself under the guidance of
“ some guilty passion; some fond desire; some
“ pleasing

“ pleasing inclination, which we willingly in-
 “ dulse, and by that means suffer the enemy
 “ of peace to establish his unruly dominion in
 “ our souls. Then tranquillity and real happi-
 “ ness quit their abode in our hearts, and all is
 “ uproar and anarchy within. This must be the
 “ fate of all who permit an evil spirit to seat it-
 “ self on the throne of their hearts, and to scat-
 “ ter around the poisonous seeds of wild desire and
 “ vicious inclinations.” But LOVE once indulg-
 ed in bright and rapturous fancies, fills the mind
 with such high and transporting ideas of supreme
 bliss, that the powers of reason are seldom, if ever,
 capable of making head against its fascinations.
 The hermit and the monk, who, from the nature
 of their situations, cannot taste its real charms,
 ought, if it were for that reason alone, to stifle
 at their birth, the earliest emotions of this in-
 spiring passion; for the indulgence of it must
 prove fatal to the virtue, and of course destructive
 to the peace, of every recluse. The impossibility
 that such characters can listen with any propriety
 to the dictates of this delightful passion, shews
 in the strongest manner, the impolicy and absur-
 dity of those institutions, to the members of which
 celibacy is enjoined. The happiness of every
 individual, as well as the civil and religious inte-
 rests of society, are best promoted by inducing
 the endearments of sense to improve the sympa-
 thies,

thies, tenderness and affections of the human heart. But these blessings are denied to the solitary fanatic, who is condemned to endure the suppression of his passions, and prevented from indulging, without endangering his principles, both the desires of sense, and the dreams of fancy. He cannot form that delightful union of the sexes, where sentiments of admiration are increased by prospects of personal advantage; where private enjoyment arises from a sense of mutual merit; and the warmest beams of love are tempered by the refreshing gales of friendship. The grosser parts of this innate and glowing passion can alone occupy his fancy; and the sentiments it instills, instead of refining his desires, and ameliorating his affections, tend, through the operation of his soul, and corrupted imagination, to render his appetites still more depraved. He is as ignorant of its benefits, as he is of its chaste and dignified pleasures; and totally unacquainted with its fine sensibilities, and varied emotions, his bosom burns with the most violent rage; his mind wallows in images of sensuality; and his temper frets itself, by unjustly accusing the tempter as the author of his misery. If the luxurious cogitations of such a character were dissipated by the pleasures and pursuits of busy life; if the violence of his passions were checked by laborious exercises; and if habits of rational study enabled him

him to vary the uniformity of retirement, and to substitute the excursions of mental curiosity, and moral reflection, instead of that perpetual recurrence of animal desire by which he is infected, the danger we have described would certainly be reduced ; but without such aids, his self-denials, his penitence, his prayers, and all the austere discipline of the monkish and ascetic school, will be ineffectual. Celibacy, indeed, instead of assisting, as their disciples mistakenly conceive, to clear the soul from its earthly impurities, and to raise it to divine brightness and sublimity, drags it down to the basest appetites and lowest desires. But matrimony, or that suitable and appropriate union of the sexes which prevails under different circumstances, according to the manner and custom of different societies, leads, when properly formed, to the highest goal of human bliss.

Hail ! wedded Love, mysterious law, true source
 Of human offspring, sole propriety,
 In Paradise of all things common else :
 By thee adult'rous lust was driven from men
 Among the bestial herds to range ; by thee,
 Founded in reason, loyal, just, and pure,
 Relations dear, and all the characters
 Of Father, Son, and Brother, first were known.
 Far be it, that I should write thee Sin, or blame,
 Or think thee unbefitting holiest place,
 Perpetual fountain of domestic sweets,

Whose

Whose bed is undefil'd, and chaste pronounc'd,
Present or past, as Saints and Patriarchs us'd.
Here Love his golden shafts employs, here lights
His constant lamp, and waves his purple wings.

The mischievous effects which the celibacy and solitude of monastic institutions produce on that passion which arises so spontaneously between the sexes in the human heart, will appear unavoidable, when it is considered, how absurdly the founders of these religious retreats have frequently endeavoured to guard against the danger. The partitions which divide the virtues from their opposite vices, are so slender and conjoined, that we scarcely reach the limits of the one, before we enter to a certain degree the confines of the other. How ridiculous, therefore, is it to conceive, that frequent meditation on forbidden pleasures, should be at all likely to eradicate impure ideas from the mind! and yet the Egyptian monastics were enjoined to have these rules continually in their contemplation: FIRST, that their bosoms must remain unagitated by the thoughts of love; that they should never permit their fancies to loiter on voluptuous images; that female beauty, in its fairest form, and most glowing charms, should be incapable of exciting in their hearts the least sensation; and that even during the hours of sleep, their minds should continue untainted by such impure affections. The chastity of these
solitary

solitary beings was, on some occasions, actually tried by experiment; but the consequences which resulted from such irrational discipline, were directly the reverse of those it was intended to produce. The imagination was vitiated; and the inclination rendered so corrupt, that neither the examples nor the precepts of more enlightened ages, were able to correct their manners, or reclaim them from the machinations of the unclean spirit. Numberless, indeed, and horrid are the instances recorded by RUFINUS, and other writers, of the perversions of all sense and reason, of all delicacy and refinement, of all virtue and true holiness, which prevailed in the ascetic solitudes of every description, while the *nuptial state* was held incompatible with the duties of religion, and the sexes separated from each other, that they might more piously, and with less interruption, follow its dictates. Some of the fathers of the church defined *female celibacy* to be the only means of living a chaste and godly life amidst the impurities of a sinful world, and of regaining, during the perdition of gross mortality, the resemblance of the soul's celestial origin. The holy happy tie of matrimony they considered as a cloak to the indulgence of impure desires, and launched their anathemas against it as an hateful institution. Even the eloquent and pious CHRYSOSTOM says, "that a double purpose

pose was intended to be attained by the institution of marriage, *viz.* the propagation of the species, and the gratification of sexual affection; but that, as population had sufficiently covered the face of the earth, the first had become no longer necessary; and that it was the duty of the sexes, rather to conquer their affections by abstinence and prayer, than indulge them under so thin a disguise. The human soul, he admits, must, in a state of celibacy, subsist under a perpetual warfare, and the faculties be in continual ferment; but contends, that piety exists in proportion to the difficulties which the sufferer surmounts. The holy fathers seem, from the whole strain of their exhortations and reasonings, to have considered female chastity in a very serious point of view; and there can be no doubt, but that it is the brightest jewel and most becoming ornament of the sex; but these reverend teachers were so blinded by their zeal that they lost all sight of nature, and mistakenly conceived that the Great Creator had planted affections in our hearts, and passions in our breasts, only to try our tempers in suppressing their turbulence, rather than to promote our happiness, and to answer the ends of his creation, by a sober and rational indulgence of them.

But Nature will not be argued out of her rights;* and these absurd doctrines introduced into

* It may be of some advantage to the readers of this work, to hear the sentiments of a sound philosopher upon this subject. “The practice of self-denial,” says he, “or the forbearance of even lawful pleasures, has been considered by almost every nation, from the remotest ages, as the highest exaltation of human virtue; and all have agreed to pay respect and veneration to those who abstained from the delights of life, even when they did not censure those who enjoy them. The general voice of mankind, civil and barbarous, confesses that the mind and body are at variance, and that neither can be made happy by its proper gratifications, but at the expence of the other; that a pampered body will darken the mind, and an enlightened mind will macerate the body; and never have failed to confer their esteem on those who prefer intellect to sense, who controul their lower by their higher faculties, and forget the wants and desires of animal life, for rational disquisitions or pious contemplations. The earth has scarcely a country so far advanced towards political regularity as to divide the inhabitants into classes, where some orders of men and women are not distinguished by voluntary severities, and where the reputation of their sanctity is not increased in proportion to the rigour of their rules, and the exactness of their performance. When an opinion to which there is no temptation of interest spreads wide, and continues long, it may be reasonably presumed to have been infused by nature, and dictated by reason. It has been often observed, that the fictions of imposture, and the illusions of fancy, soon give way to time and experience; and that nothing keeps its ground but TRUTH. But Truth, when it is reduced to practice, easily becomes subject to caprice and imagination, and many particular acts will be wrong, though their general principles be right. It cannot be denied, that a just conviction

into every monastic institution throughout Europe, a private intercourse, hostile, from its evil

N 2

example,

conviction of the restraint necessary to be laid upon the appetites, has produced extravagant and unnatural modes of mortification; and INSTITUTIONS, which, however favourably considered, will be found to violate NATURE without promoting PIETY. But the doctrine of *self-denial* is not weakened in itself by the errors of those who misinterpret or misapply it; the encroachment of the appetites upon the understanding is hourly perceived; and the state of those whom *sensuality* has enslaved, is known to be in the highest degree despicable and wretched. The dread of such shameful captivity may justly raise alarms, and wisdom will endeavour to keep danger at a distance. By timely caution, and suspicious vigilance, those desires may be repressed, to which indulgence would soon give absolute dominion; those enemies may be overcome, which, when they have been awhile accustomed to victory, can no longer be resisted. Nothing is more fatal to happiness or virtue, than that confidence which flatters us with an opinion of our own strength, and, by assuring us of the power of retreat, precipitates us into hazard. Some may safely venture farther than others into the regions of delight, lay themselves more open to the golden shafts of pleasure, and advance nearer to the residence of the Syrens; but he that is best armed with constancy and reason, is yet vulnerable in one part or other; and to every man there is a point fixed, beyond which, if he passes, he will not easily return. It is certainly most wise, as it is most safe, to stop before he touches the utmost limit, since every step of advance will more and more entice him to go forward, till he shall at last enter into the recesses of voluptuousness, and sloth and despondency close the passage behind him. To deny *early* and *inflexibly*, is the only art of checking the impetuosity of desire, and of preserving quiet and innocence. Innocent gratifications may be sometimes withheld:

he

example, to the interests both of morality and religion. The nuns of the convent of *Argenteuil*, who chose ELOISA for their abbess, were, in all probability, influenced in their choice by the recollection of her former frailty, and their knowledge of the present ruling passion of her heart: they meant to provide the abbey with a superior who, if she were not inclined to promote, would feel no disposition to interrupt, their intrigues. The fact certainly was, that, during the time ELOISA presided over the convent, the conduct of the nuns was so extremely licentious, that SUGGER, abbot of *St. Dennis*, complained of their irregularities to pope HONORIUS in such a manner, as to induce his holiness to give the
 abbot

he that complies with all lawful desires, will certainly lose his empire over himself, and, in time, either submit his reason to his wishes, and think all his desires lawful; or dismiss his reason as troublesome and intrusive, and resolve to snatch what he may happen to wish, without enquiring about right and wrong. No man, whose appetites are his masters, can perform the duties of his nature with strictness and regularity. He that would be superior to external influences, must first become superior to his own passions. Upon him who has reduced his senses to obedience, temptation has lost its power; he is then able to attend impartially to Virtue, and to execute her commands without hesitation. To set the mind above the appetites, is the end of abstinence, which one of *the fathers* observes to be not a virtue, but the ground-work of virtue. By forbearing to do what may be innocently done, we may add hourly new vigour to resolution, and secure the power of resistance when pleasure or interest shall lend their charms to guilt."

abbot possession of it ; and he immediately expelled the negligent prioress and her intriguing sisters, and established in their place a monastery of his own order. Strong suspicions may, perhaps, prevail against the virtue and integrity of ELOISA's character, from the dissoluteness which existed in this society ; but she was certainly not included by name in the articles of accusation which the abbot of *St. Dennis* transmitted upon this subject to the court of ROME ; and there is every reason to believe that these irregularities were carefully concealed from her knowledge. When this lovely victim was presented with *the veil*, some persons, who pitied her youth, and admired her beauty, represented to her the cruel sacrifice she would make of herself by accepting it ; but she immediately exclaimed, in the words of CORNELIA, after the death of POMPEY THE GREAT,

“ Oh ! my lov'd lord ! our fatal marriage draws
On thee this doom, and I the guilty cause :
Then while thou goest the extremes of fate to prove,
I'll share that fate, and expiate thus my love !”

and accepted the fatal present with a constancy not to have been expected in a woman who had so high a taste for pleasures which she might still enjoy. It will, therefore, be easily conceived, that her distress, on being ignominiously expelled

from this retreat was exceeding severe. She applied to ABELARD to procure her some permanent asylum, where she might have the opportunity of estranging herself from all earthly weaknesses and passions; and he, by the permission of the bishop of *Troyes*, resigned to her the house and the chapel of PARACLETE, with its appendages, where she settled with a few sisters, and became herself the foundress of a nunnery. Of this monastery she continued the superior until she died: and whatever her conduct was among the licentious nuns of *Argenteuil*, she lived so regular in this her new and last retreat, and conducted herself with such exemplary prudence, zeal, and piety, that all her former failings were forgot, her character adored by all who knew her, and her monastery in a short time enriched with so great a variety of donations, that she was celebrated as the ablest cultivator of the virtues of forgiveness and Christian charity then existing. The bishop of the district behaved to her as if she had been his own daughter; the neighbouring priors and abbots treated her with all the tenderness and attention of a real sister; and those who were distressed and poor, revered her as their mother. But all her cares, and all her virtues, could not protect her against the returning weakness of her heart. “Solitude,” says she, “is insupportable to a
“ mind

“ mind that is ill at ease ; its troubles increase in
“ the midst of silence, and retirement heightens
“ them. Since I have been shut up within
“ these walls, I have done nothing but weep
“ for our misfortunes ; this cloister has resound-
“ ed with my cries ; and, like a wretch con-
“ demned to eternal slavery, I have worn out
“ my days in grief and sighing.”

The useful regulations imposed by the wisdom of ST. BENEDICT, upon the votaries of monastic retirement, were soon neglected. Abstinence and prayer were succeeded by luxury and impiety. The revenues of the several orders had, by the encreased value of property, become so great, that they were expended in purchasing a remission of those duties which their founders had enjoined. The admission of the poor laity relieved the initiated members from the toil of cultivating the demesne lands, and produced a system of indolence and laziness. They exchanged their long fasts, and unfavoury diets, for frequent feasts and the richest repasts ; substituted indolent pride for laborious humility ; and lost entirely their original piety and virtue. ABELARD, indeed, and some few other abbots of the tenth century, endeavoured to restore the ancient severity of discipline, but they were reviled and persecuted with

the most vindictive malice by their contemporaries. The DUKE OF BRITTANY, in order to secure ABELARD from the rage with which he was pursued for exercising qualities which ought to have procured him admiration and esteem, gave him the convent of *St. Gildas*, as an asylum from their hatred. The high character which this monastery comparatively enjoyed for regularity and good order, excited a hope that he might here find rest from his vexations, and consolation for his griefs. But, instead of finding it the seat of wisdom and piety, and the mansion of tranquillity, he discovered the most dissolute manners, and abandoned conduct, prevailing in every part of the convent. His mild and rational attempts to reclaim these disorderly brethren, were so far from producing the desired effect upon their minds, that it only provoked their rage, and gave new edge to their malice. Foiled in their endeavours, by conspiracy and calumny, to dispossess him of his situation, they attempted several times, at their common repasts, to infuse poison into his victuals ; and at length, dreadful to relate ! actually administered, in the sacramental cup, the poisoned chalice to his lips, but which he was miraculously prevented from tasting. It is, indeed, impossible to read the description he has given of his dreadful situation

tion in this wild and savage community, without shuddering at the idea how much an irrational Solitude tends to corrupt the manners and deprave the heart. “ I live,” says he, in his letter to PHILINTUS, “ in a barbarous country, “ the language of which I do not understand. I “ have no conversation, but with the rudest “ people. My walks are on the inaccessible “ shore of a sea which is perpetually stormy. “ My monks are only known by their dissolute- “ nefs, and living without any rule or order. “ Ah ! PHILINTUS, were you to see my habi- “ tation, you would rather think it a slaughter- “ house than a convent. The doors and walks “ are without any ornament, except the heads “ of wild boars, the antlers of stags, the feet “ of foxes, and the hides of other animals, which “ are nailed up against them. The cells are “ hung with the skins of victims destroyed in “ the chase. The monks have not so much “ as a bell to wake them, and are only roused “ from their drowsiness by the howling of dogs “ and the croaking of ravens. Nothing disturbs “ their laziness or languor, but the rude noises “ of hunting ; and their only alternatives are “ riot and rest. But I should return my thanks “ to heaven if that were their only fault. I “ endeavour in vain to recall them to their duty ; “ they all combine against me ; and I only ex-

“ pose myself to continual vexations and dan-
 “ gers. I imagine I see every moment a naked
 “ sword hanging over my head. Sometimes they
 “ surround me, and load me with the vilest
 “ abuse; and even when they abandon me,
 “ I am still left to my own dreadful and tor-
 “ menting thoughts.” This single example
 would be sufficient to prove the extraordinary
 dominion which Solitude has over the human
 mind. It is, indeed, unless it be managed with
 great good sense, the compleat nursery of mis-
 chief. The mind is without those numerous
 incentives to action which are continually occur-
 ring in the busy world; and nothing can contri-
 bute to produce irregular and disorderly passions
 more, than the want of some pursuit by which
 the heart is interested, and the mind employed.
 The minds of idle persons are always restless;
 their hearts never at perfect ease; their spirits
 continually on the fret; and their passions goaded
 to the most unwarrantable excess.

Idleness, even in social life, inflicts the severest
 torments on the soul; destroys the repose of in-
 dividuals; and, when general, frequently endan-
 gers the safety of the state. TIMOTHEUS, an
 Egyptian monk, surnamed ΑΙΛΟΥΡΟΣ, or *the Cat*,
 a short time after the Eutychian Controversy, in
 the year 457, felt an ambition to fill the episcopal
 and

and patriarchal chair. The splenetic restlessness which prevailed among the monks in their several monastic solitudes, seemed to present to his observing eye, proper instruments for the execution of his scheme. He was conscious, from his profound knowledge of the human character, that if men who had so long remained in uneasy and dissatisfied indolence, could be provoked to activity, their zeal would be as turbulent as their former life had been lazy and supine; and that their dispositions might be easily turned to the accomplishment of his wishes. The better to effect his purpose, he cloathed himself in a white garment, crept silently in the dead of night to the cells of his companions, and, through a tube, which concealed his voice, while it magnified the sound of it, hailed every monk by his name. The sound seemed to convey the voice of heaven to the superstitious ears of the awakened auditors; and the sagacious and enterprizing trumpeter did not fail to announce himself as an ambassador of heaven, sent in the name of the Almighty to command the monks to assemble immediately, to consult on the most likely mode of deposing the Nestorian heretic PROTERUS, and of raising the favoured and orthodox TIMOTHEUS to the episcopal throne. The idea of being thus elected to execute this pious rebellion, roused all the sleeping powers of these solitary and hitherto idle

fanatics; they rose tumultuously at the sacred signal; proclaimed THE CAT as a heaven-elected patriarch; solicited him, with friendly violence, not to refuse the promised boon; and burning with all the ardour of expected success, marched, in a few days, under the banner of the impostor to *Alexandria*, where they inspired the members of other monasteries with their own delusion, and created throughout *Egypt* the wildest and most tremendous commotions. The populace caught the religious frenzy, and joined in vast numbers the monastic rout. Assisted by this desperate rabble, TIMOTHEUS proceeded to the principal church of *Alexandria*, where he was, by a pre-concerted arrangement, pompously received by two deposed bishops, and ordained the Metropolitan of the whole Egyptian territory. PROTERUS was astonished at this sudden irruption, and hurled his anathemas with great art and dexterity against the impious audacity of the obscure monastic, who had thus dared to depart from the humility of his station, and to invade with his indolent brethren the rights of sovereignty; but being well aware of the fury with which this description of men generally act when they are once set in motion, and being informed of the vast multitude by which they had been joined, he thought it prudent to quit his palace, and to retire to the sacred shelter of the church of

ST.

ST. QUIRINUS. Heathens and barbarians had heretofore respected this venerable sanctuary; but, upon the present occasion, it was incapable of giving safety to its aged refugee. The furious troops of the holy impostor burst with irresistible violence through the walls of this consecrated edifice, and with their daggers drank the blood of the innocent Pontiff, even upon that altar the very sight of which ought to have paralysed the hand of guilt. His surrounding and numerous friends, particularly six ecclesiastics of great eminence, learning, and piety, shared the fate of their unhappy master, and were found, when the dreadful massacre was over, clinging with fondness, in the arms of death, round his mangled body. But it was necessary for the murderers to calumniate the purity of that life which they had thus violently and injuriously destroyed. They accordingly dragged the corpse of this virtuous patriarch to the most public part of the city, and, after the grossest abuse of his character, and most scandalous misrepresentation of his conduct, hung it on an elevated cross, and exposed it to the brutal insults of the misguided and deluded populace. To compleat this unmanly outrage, they at length committed the torn and mangled remains of this excellent prelate to the flames, and hurled his ashes, amidst the most opprobrious and insulting epithets, into the darkened air; exclaiming,

exclaiming, with horrid imprecations, that the mortal part of such a wretch was not entitled to the rights of sepulture, or even the tears of friends. So furious and undaunted, indeed, were all the oriental monks, when once roused from their monastic lethargy, that even the soldiers of the Greek emperors cautiously avoided meeting them in the field. The fury by which they were actuated was so blind, that the pious CHRYSOSTOM, the warmest and most zealous advocate for monastic institutions, trembled at its approach. This celebrated father of the church was born in the year 344, of one of the first families of the city of *Antioch*, and added new lustre to their fame by his virtues and his eloquence. Having finished his studies with wonderful success, under LIBANIUS, the greatest rhetorician of the age, he devoted himself to the study of the law; but religion having planted itself deeply in his mind, he quitted all secular concerns, and retired into solitude among the mountains in the vicinity of the city, where, in dreary caves, he devoted two entire years to penitence and prayer. Ill health, however, obliging him to return to *Antioch*, he began to preach the word, and was soon followed by a host of disciples. The life of this excellent pastor was an example to his whole flock. He endeavoured to drive away the wolves from the folds, and sent missionaries even into *Scythia*,

Scythia, to convert its inhabitants to Christianity.* These missions, and his various charities, required either considerable revenues, or the most rigid economy ; and the holy patriarch was contented to live in the extremes of poverty, that he might have the better opportunity of relieving the sufferings of his fellow-creatures. The character and conduct of this virtuous pontiff soon gained him the hearts of his people, and he set himself earnestly to reform the many abuses which at this time prevailed at *Constantinople*. The severity and vehemence, however, with which he declaimed against the pride, the luxury, and the rapacity of the great ; the zeal with which he endeavoured to reform the vices and misconduct of the clergy ; and the eagerness he discovered for the conversion of heretics, created him a multitude of enemies ; and EUTROPIUS, the favourite of the emperor ARCADIUS ; GAINAS, the tyrant, to whom he had refused protection for the Arians ; THEOPHILUS, of *Alexandria*, the patron of the *Origenists* ; and the disciples of ARIUS, whom he banished from *Constantinople*, entered into a conspiracy against him ; and an occasion soon happened, which gave them the opportunity of taking
ample

* CHRYSOSTOM was promoted to the archbishoprick of Constantinople after the death of NECTARIUS, the successor of GREGORY NAZIANZEN.

ample vengeance. The intrepid preacher, convinced that, while he declaimed against vice in general, the peculiar vices which prevailed in the court of the empress EUDOXIA, and the personal misconduct of the empress herself, called aloud for his severest animadversions, he took every opportunity of exposing them to the public abhorrence. The resentment of the court encouraged the discontent of the clergy and monks of *Constantinople*, who had been very severely disciplined by the zeal of the archbishop. He had condemned from the pulpit, the domestic females of the clergy of *Constantinople*, who, under the name of servants or sisters, afforded a perpetual occasion either of sin or of scandal. The silent and solitary ascetics, who had secluded themselves from the world, were entitled to the warmest approbation of CHRYSOSTOM; but he despised and stigmatized, as the disgrace of their holy profession, the crowd of degenerate monks, who, from some unworthy motives of pleasure or profit, so frequently infested the streets of the metropolis. To the voice of persuasion, the archbishop was obliged to add the lesson of authority; and in his visitation through the Asiatic provinces, he deposed thirteen bishops of *Lydia* and *Phrygia*; and declared that a deep corruption of simony and licentiousness had infected the whole episcopal order. These bishops
also.

also entered into the confederacy above mentioned, and the excellent CHRYSOSTOM was studiously represented as the intolerable tyrant of the Eastern church. This ecclesiastical conspiracy was managed by the archbishop of *Alexandria*, who, by the invitation of EUDOXIA, landed at *Constantinople* with a stout body of Egyptian mariners to encounter the populace, and a train of dependent bishops, to secure, by their voices, a majority of a synod. The synod was convened in the suburbs of *Chalcedon*, and was called THE OAK; in which CHRYSOSTOM was condemned of treason against the empress; rudely arrested, and driven into exile; from whence, however, he was in two days recalled; but, upon a repetition of his imputed offences, was again banished to the remote and desolate town of *Cucusus*, among the ridges of *Mount Taurus*, in the *Lesser Armenia*. On his way to this place, he was detained by sickness at *Cesarea*, and at length confined to his bed. The bishop of *Cesarea*, who had long entertained a secret enmity against him, unmoved by his fallen fortunes and helpless state, stirred up the lazy monks of the surrounding monasteries to vengeance against him. The fury with which they issued from their respective cells was incredible; like the sleeping powder of the present age, they burst into immediate conflagration and explosion, at the touch of that hand by which they

they were fired, and directing their heated animosity against the dying CHRYSOSTOM, surrounded his house, and threatened, that if he did not immediately depart, they would involve it in flames, and bury him in its ruins. The soldiers of the garrison were called out to protect the life of this virtuous ecclesiastic; and, on their arrival at the scene of action, very courteously requested the enraged monks to be quiet, and depart; but the request was treated with contempt and defiance; and it was by the humane resolution of CHRYSOSTOM himself that this tumult was quelled; for, rather than the blood of his fellow-creatures should be shed on his account, he desired a litter might be procured, into which, in an almost expiring state, he was roughly laid, and, by his departure from the city, escaped the fury which thus assailed his life.*

It

* CHRYSOSTOM arrived at the place of his confinement; “and the three years,” says Mr. GIBBON, “which he spent at *Cucusus*, and the neighbouring town of *Arabossus*, were the last and most glorious of his life. His character was consecrated by absence and persecution; the faults of his administration were no longer remembered, but every tongue repeated the praises of his genius and virtue; and the respectable attention of the Christian world was fixed on a desert spot among the mountains of *Taurus*. From that solitude the archbishop, whose active mind was invigorated by misfortunes, maintained a strict and frequent correspondence with the most distant provinces; exhorted

It is evident, from these facts, that the irrational Solitude of monastic institutions, particularly that which prevailed in the early ages of Christianity in the Eastern parts of the converted world, instead of rendering the votaries of it mild, complacent, and humane, filled their minds with the wildest notions, and the most uncharitable

exhorted the separate congregations of his faithful adherents to persevere in their allegiance; urged the destruction of the temples of *Pheniciæ*, and the extirpation of the heresy in the *Isle of Cyprus*; extended his pastoral care to the missions of *Persia* and *Scythia*; negociated, by his ambassadors, with the Roman Pontiff and the emperor *HONORIUS*; and boldly appealed, from a partial synod, to the supreme tribunal of a free and general council. The mind of the illustrious exile was still independent; but his captive body was exposed to the revenge of the oppressors, who continued to abuse the name and authority of *ARCADIUS*. An order was dispatched for the instant removal of *CHRYSOSTOM* to the extreme desert of *Pityus*; and his guards so faithfully obeyed the cruel instructions, that, before he reached the sea-coast of the Euxine, he expired at *Comana*, in *Pontus*, in the sixtieth year of his age. The succeeding generation acknowledged his innocence and merit. The archbishops of the East, who might blush that their predecessors had been the enemies of *CHRYSOSTOM*, were gradually disposed, by the firmness of the Roman Pontiff, to restore the honours of that venerable name. At the pious solicitation of the clergy and people of Constantinople, his relics, thirty years after his death, were transported from their obscure sepulchre to the royal city. The emperor *THEODOSIUS* advanced to receive them as far as *Chalcedon*, and falling prostrate on the coffin, implored, in the name of his guilty parents, *ARCADIUS* and *EUDOXIA*, the forgiveness of the injured saint."

ritable and acrimonious passions, and fostered in their hearts the most dangerous and destructive vices. It is truly said, by a very elegant writer, and profound observer of men and manners, that monastic institutions unavoidably contract and fetter the human mind ; that the partial attachment of A MONK to the interests of his Order, which is often incompatible with that of other citizens, the habit of implicit obedience to the will of a superior, together with the frequent return of the wearisome and frivolous duties of the cloister, debase his faculties, and extinguish that generosity of sentiment and spirit, which qualifies men for thinking and feeling justly with respect to what is proper in life and conduct ; and that FATHER PAUL, of *Venice*, was, perhaps, the only person educated in a cloister, that ever was altogether superior to its prejudices, or who viewed the transactions of men, and reasoned concerning the interests of society, with the enlarged sentiments of a philosopher, with the discernment of a man conversant in affairs, and with the liberality of a gentleman. Depraved, however, as this order of men has ever been, it was to their prayers and masses that all the princes and potentates of more than half the discovered regions of the earth confided their salvation, and expected, from their intercession, divine favour from the Fountain of all Goodness and Truth.

Truth. But the fears which these artful and intriguing ecclesiastics raised in the weak or guilty minds of their contemporaries, instead of being quieted by the conciliatory and comforting doctrines of the Gospel of Christ, were converted to the purposes of their own sordid avarice, and made subservient to the enjoyment of their vices, and the advancement of their power. They inculcated the notion, that the surest passport to eternal bliss, was to overwhelm them with riches, and to indulge them with extraordinary privileges; and every haughty noble, or despotic sovereign, who was anxious to gratify his own wanton pleasures, and capricious vices, at the expence of his people's prosperity and happiness, endeavoured to reconcile himself to his offended God, by bribing these ambitious and greedy monastics, to grant them absolution for their deepest crimes.* Their history exhibits, in full view, the melancholy truth, that their hearts were corrupted by the worst passions that disgrace humanity, and that the discipline of the convent was seldom productive

* A book, under the German title of *Römische Causaleyletze*, which was published at *Cologne* in the year 1515, gives a long list of the several offences and crimes for which absolution might, for a valuable consideration, be purchased of the Holy Pontiff. In this black catalogue of human depravity, it appears that the murder of a brother, sister, husband, wife, or parent, the violation of female chastity, and the sin of fornication, were pardoned upon very easy terms.

tive of a single virtue. Enthusiasts, indeed, of every description, whose sentiments and feelings are continually at war with the dictates of nature, and who renounce all the pleasing sympathies, gentle endearments, kind connections, and rational enjoyments of life, are not likely to entertain any great anxiety for the interests or happiness of others, or to feel the least commiseration for their sorrows. Occupied by sordid and selfish pursuits, they must hate and despise a society, to the lively enjoyments of which they look back with such keen regret. When the mind, alas ! has numbed its sense of social joys, and become a stranger to the delightful charms of sweet domestic love ; when all affection for the world and its concerns has been studiously expelled from the bosom, and no kind feeling or social inclination suffered to fill the vacant heart ; when man has separated himself from his species, and has not united his soul with his Creator ; he has lost all power of being happy himself, or of communicating happiness to others.

The bishops exceeded the inferior clergy in every kind of profligacy as much as in opulence and power ; and, of course, their superintending and visitatorial authority, was not exerted to lessen or restrain the prevalence of those vices

2

which

which their evil example contributed so greatly to encrease. Time and chance sometimes produce extraordinary events ; and if a really pious, vigilant and austere prelate arose amidst the general dissoluteness of the age, his single efforts to reclaim these solitary ecclesiastics was seldom attended with success. These Fathers, indeed, frequently scrutinized with great minuteness into the practices of the convents ; and as they were not so able to detect the guilt of incontinency, as some philosophers of the present age pretend to be, by the lines and features of the face, they proceeded upon evidence less delicate, perhaps, but certainly more demonstrative and unerring.

The celebrated BOCCACE has, by his witty and ingenious tales, very severely satirized the licentiousness and immorality which prevailed during his time in the Italian monasteries ; but, by exposing the scandalous lives, and lashing the vices, of the monks, nuns, and other orders of the Catholic clergy, he has been decried as a contemner of religion, and as an enemy to true piety. Contemporary historians have also delivered the most disgusting accounts of their intemperance and debauchery. The frailty, indeed, of the female monastics was even an article of regular taxation ; and the Holy Father did
not

not disdain to fill his coffers with the price of their impurities. The frail nun, whether she had become immured within a convent, or still resided without its walls, might redeem her lost honour, and be reinstated in her former dignity and virtue, for a few ducats. This scandalous traffic was carried to an extent that soon destroyed all sense of morality, and heightened the hue of vice. AMBROSIUS, bishop of *Camadoli*, a prelate of extraordinary virtue, visited various convents in his diocese, but, in inspecting their proceedings, he found no traces of virtue, or even of decency, remaining in any one of them; nor was he able, with all the sagacity he exercised on the subject, to re-infuse the smallest particle of these qualities into the degenerated minds of the sisterhood.

The reform of the nunneries was the first step that distinguished the government of SEXTUS THE FOURTH, after he ascended the papal throne, at the close of the fifteenth century. BOSSUS, a celebrated canon, of the strictest principles, and most inflexible disposition, was the agent selected by his holiness for this arduous achievement. The Genoese convents, where the nuns lived in open defiance of all the rules of decency, and precepts of religion, were the first objects of his attention. The orations which he publicly
I
uttered

uttered from the pulpit, as well as the private lectures and exhortations which he delivered to the nuns from the confessional chair, were fine models not only of his zeal and probity, but of his literature and eloquence. They breathed, in the most impressive manner, the true spirit of Christian purity : but his glowing representations of the bright beauties of Virtue, and the dark deformities of Vice, made little impression upon their corrupted hearts. Despising the open calumnies of the envious, and the secret hostilities of the guilty, he proceeded, in spite of all discouragement and opposition, in his highly honourable pursuit ; and at length, by his wisdom and assiduity, beheld the fairest prospects of success daily opening to his view. The rays of hope, however, had scarcely beamed upon his endeavours, when they were immediately overclouded by disappointment. The arm of magistracy, which he had wisely called upon to aid the accomplishment of his design, was enervated by the venality of its hand ; and the incorrigible objects of his solicitude having freed themselves by bribery from the terror of the civil power, condemned the reformer's denunciations of eternal vengeance hereafter, and relapsed into their former licentiousness and depravity. A few, indeed, among the great number of nuns who inhabited these guilty convents, were converted by the force

of his eloquent remonstrances, and became afterwards highly exemplary by the virtue and piety of their lives; but the rest abandoned themselves to their impious courses; and, though more vigorous methods were, in a short time, adopted against the refractory monastics, they set all attempts to reform them at defiance. The modes, perhaps, in which their vices were indulged, changed with the character of the age; and as manners grew more refined, the gross and shameful indulgences of the monks and nuns, were changed into a more elegant and decent style of enjoyment. Fashion might render them more prudent and reserved in their intrigues; but their passions were not less vicious, nor their dispositions less corrupt.

The disorderly manners of these solitary devotees were among the principal causes that produced the REFORMATION. There is a point beyond which even depravity cannot go in corrupting the manners of the age. The number and power of the monastics, or, as they were at that time called, the *Regular Clergy*, was certainly great, and their resistance to the approaches of reformation obstinate; but the temper of the times had changed, and the glorious and beneficial event was at length accomplished. The Catholics viewed the dismemberment of their church

church as a fatal stroke to their interest and power ; but it has since been confessed, by every candid and rational member of this communion, to be an event which has contributed to advance morals to a higher degree of perfection than they had ever before attained since the introduction of Christianity, and to restore the discipline of the church to some portion of its original purity.

The pure spirit of the Gospel of Christ breathes forth a holy religion, founded on meekness, charity, kindness, and brotherly love ; but fanaticism, when joined to a systematic and irrational solitude, only produces the rank and poisonous fruits we have already described. The trivial, querulous and intolerant superstitions, which during so many ages eclipsed the reason and morals of mankind, and obscured, in clouds of lust and cruelty, the bright rays of evangelical truth, were the sad effects of irrational solitude. The best affections of nature were perverted or suppressed ; all the gentle offices of humanity were neglected ; moral sentiment despised ; and the angel voice of Piety unheard, or converted into the violent vociferations of hatred, and the cries of persecution. The loud clangors of pretended orthodoxy resounded with sanguinary hostilities from shore to shore ; the earth was deluged with the

blood of those who dared to deny, or even to doubt, the absurd and idle dogmas which the monks every where invented; and their horrid barbarities were attempted to be justified by propagating the notion, that severity with heretics was the only mode of preserving the true faith. Oh, how blind is human folly! how obdurate are hearts vitiated by pride! How can that be the true faith, which tears asunder every social tie, annihilates all the feelings of nature, places cruelty and horror on the throne of humanity and love, and scatters ferocious fury, and insatiable hatred, through the paths of life? But we may now indulge a pleasing hope that the period is at hand, when the sacred TEMPLE OF RELIGION, purified, by the labours of learned and truly pious men, from the foul stains with which fanaticism and ambition have so long defaced it, shall be restored to its own divine simplicity; and only the voice of gentleness, of love, of peace, of VIRTUE, and of godliness, be heard within its walls. Then will every Christian be truly taught the only means by which his days may be useful, and his life happy; and Catholics, Lutherans, Calvinists, Protestants, and every really religious class of men, will unite in acts of sincere benevolence and universal peace. No austere, gloomy, and dispiriting duties, no irrational penances and unnatural mortifications, will be

be enjoined ; no intolerant cruelties be inflicted ; no unsocial institutions established ; no rites of solitary selfishness be required ; but REASON and RELIGION, in divine perfection, will reassume their reigns ; an unaffected and sincere devotion will occupy every mind ; the Almighty will be worshipped *in spirit and in truth* ; and we shall be convinced that “ The wicked are like the
 “ troubled sea when it cannot rest ; but that the
 “ work of righteousness is peace ; and the effect
 “ of righteousness, quietude and assurance for
 “ ever.” To effect this, a rational retirement from the tumults of the world will be occasionally necessary, in order to *commune with our own hearts, and be still*, and to dispose our minds to such a train of thinking, as shall prepare us, when the giddy whirl of life is finished, for the society of more exalted spirits.

Oh! would mankind but make fair *Truth* their guide,
 And force the helm from Prejudice and Pride,
 Were once these maxims fix'd, that GOD's our friend,
 VIRTUE or good, and HAPPINESS our end,
 How soon must Reason o'er the world prevail,
 And *Error, Fraud, and Superstition* fail!
 None would hereafter, then, with groundless fear,
 Describe THE ALMIGHTY, cruel and severe ;
 Predestinating some, without pretence,
 To heaven ; and some to hell for no offence ;
 Inflicting endless pains for transient crimes,
 And favouring sects or nations, men or times.

To please him, none would foolishly forbear
 Or food or rest, or itch in shirts of hair ;
 Or deem it merit to believe, or teach,
 What Reason contradicts, or cannot reach ;
 None would fierce ZEAL for PIETY mistake,
 Or Malice, for whatever tenet's sake,
 Or think salvation to one sect confin'd,
 And heaven too narrow to contain mankind :
 No more would brutal rage disturb our peace,
 But, envy, hatred, war and discord cease ;
 Our own and others' good each hour employ,
 And all things smile with universal joy.
 Fair VIRTUE then, with pure RELIGION join'd,
 Would regulate and bless the human mind,
 And man be what his Maker first design'd.



CHAPTER THE SEVENTH.

OF THE DANGER OF IDLENESS
IN SOLITUDE.

IDLENESS is truly said to be the root of all evil ; and Solitude certainly encourages in the generality of its votaries, this baneful disposition. Nature has so framed the character of man, that his happiness essentially depends on his passions being properly interested, his imagination busied, and his faculties employed ; but these engagements are seldom found in the vacant scenes and tedious hours of retirement from the world, except by those who have acquired the great and happy art of furnishing their own amusements : an art which, as we have already shewn, can never be learnt in the irrational solitude of caves and cells.

The idleness which solitude is so apt to induce, is dangerous in proportion to the natural strength, activity and spirit of the mind ; for it is observed, that the highest characters are frequently goaded by that restlessness which accompanies leisure, to acts of the wildest outrage and greatest enormity. The ancient legislators were

so conscious that indolence, whether indulged in Solitude or in Society, is the nurse of civil commotion, and the chief instigator of moral turpitude, that they wisely framed their laws to prevent its existence. SOLON observing that the city was filled with persons who assembled from all parts on account of the great security in which people lived in ATTICA, that the country withal was poor and barren, and being conscious that merchants, who traffic by sea, do not use to transport their goods where they can have nothing in exchange, turned the attention of the citizens to manufactures; and for this purpose made a law, that he who was three times convicted of idleness, should be deemed *infamous*; that no son should be obliged to maintain his father, if he had not taught him a trade; that trades should be accounted *honourable*; and that the council of the *Areopagus* should examine into every man's means of living, and chastise the idle with the greatest severity. DRACO conceived it so necessary to prevent the prevalence of a vice to which man is by nature prone, and which is so destructive to his character, and ruinous to his manners, that he punished idleness with death. The tyrant PISISTRATUS, as THEOPHRASTUS relates, was so convinced of the importance of preventing idleness among his subjects, that he made a law
 against

against it, which produced at once industry in the country, and tranquillity in the city. PERICLES, who, in order to relieve ATHENS from a number of lazy citizens, whose lives were neither employed in virtuous actions, nor guarded from guilt by habits of industry, planted colonies in *Chersonesus*, *Naxos*, *Andros*, *Thrace*, and even in *Italy*, and sent them thither; for this sagacious statesman saw the danger of indulging this growing vice, and wisely took precautions to prevent it. Nothing, indeed, contributes more essentially to the tranquillity of a nation, and to the peaceful demeanour of its inhabitants, than those artificial wants which luxury introduces; for by creating a demand for the fashionable articles, they engage the attention, and employ the hands, of a multitude of manufacturers and artificers, who, if they were left in that restless indolence which the want of work creates, would certainly be unhappy themselves, and in all probability would be fomenting mischief in the minds of others. To suspend, only for one week, the vast multitudes that are employed in the several mechanical trades and manufactories in *Great Britain*, would be to run the risk of involving the metropolis of that great, flourishing and powerful country once more in flames; for it would be converting the populace into an aptly-disposed train of combustible matter, which be-

ing kindled by the least spark of accidental enthusiasm, by the heat of political faction, or, indeed, by their own internal fermentation, would explode into the most flagrant enormities. Nature, it is said, abhors *a vacuum*; and this old Peripatetic principle may be properly applied to the intellect, which will embrace any thing, however absurd or criminal, rather than be wholly without an object. The same author also observes, that every man may date the predominance of those desires that disturb his life, and contaminate his conscience, from some unhappy hour when too much leisure exposed him to their incursions; for that *he* has lived with little observation, either on himself or others, who does not know, that to be idle is to be vicious. “Many writers of eminence in physic,” continues this eminent writer, whose works not only disclose his general acquaintance with life and manners, but a profound knowledge of human nature, “have laid out their diligence upon the consideration of those distempers to which men are exposed by particular states of life, and very learned treatises have been produced upon the maladies of the camp, the sea, and the mines. There are, indeed, few employments which a man, accustomed to academical enquiries, and medical refinements, would not find reason for declining as dangerous to health, did not his learning

learning or experience inform him, that almost every occupation, however inconvenient or formidable, is happier and safer than *a life of sloth*. The necessity of action is not only demonstrable from the fabric of the body, but evident from observation of the universal practice of mankind; who, for the preservation of health in those whose rank or wealth exempts them from the necessity of lucrative labours, have invented sports and diversions, though not of equal use to the world with manual trades, yet of equal fatigue to those who practise them, and differing only from the drudgery of the husbandman or manufacturer, as they are acts of choice, and therefore performed without the painful sense of compulsion. The huntsman rises early, pursues his game through all the dangers and obstructions of the chase, swims rivers, and scales precipices, till he returns home no less harrassed than the soldier, and has, perhaps, sometimes incurred as great hazard of wounds and death: yet he has no motive to excite his ardour; he is neither subject to the command of a general, nor dreads the penalties of neglect or disobedience: he has neither profits nor honours to expect from his perils and conquests; but acts without the hope of mural or civic garlands, and must content himself with the praise of his tenants and companions. But such is the constitution of MAN,

that *labour is its own reward*; nor will any external incitements be requisite, if it be considered how much happiness is gained, and how much misery escaped, by frequent and violent agitation of the body. Ease is the most that can be hoped from a sedentary and inactive habit; but ease is a mere neutral state between pain and pleasure. The dance of spirits, the bound of vigour, readiness of enterprize, and defiance of fatigue, are reserved for him that braces his nerves, and hardens his fibres; that keeps his limbs pliant with motion; and, by frequent exposure, fortifies his frame against the common accidents of cold and heat. With ease, however, if it could be secured, many would be content; but nothing terrestrial can be kept at a stand. EASE, if it is not rising into pleasure, will be settling into pain; and whatever hopes the dreams of speculation may suggest, of observing the proportion between retirement and labour, and keeping the body in a healthy state by supplies exactly equal to its weight, we know that, in effect, the vital powers, unexcited by motion, grow gradually languid, decay, and die. It is necessary to that perfection of which our present state is capable, that the mind and body should both be kept in action; that neither the faculties of the one nor the other, should be suffered to grow lax or torpid for want of use; that neither health can be purchased

chased by voluntary submission to ignorance, nor knowledge cultivated at the expence of that health, which must enable it either to give pleasure to its possessor, or assistance to others. It is too frequently the pride of students, to despise those amusements which give to the rest of mankind, strength of limbs and chearfulness of heart. Solitude and contemplation are, indeed, seldom consistent with such skill in common exercises or sports, as is necessary to make them practised with delight; and no man is willing to do that of which the necessity is not pressing, when he knows that his awkwardness but makes him ridiculous. I have always admired the wisdom of those by whom our female education was instituted, for having contrived that every woman, of whatever condition, should be taught some arts of manufacture, by which the vacuities of recluse and domestic leisure may be filled up. These arts are more necessary, as the weakness of their sex, and their general system of life, debar ladies from many employments which, by diversifying the circumstances of men, preserve them from being cankered by the rust of their own thoughts. I know not how much of the virtue and happiness of the world may be the consequence of this judicious regulation. Perhaps the most powerful fancy might be unable to figure the confusion and slaughter that would be produced by so many
piercing

piercing eyes, and vivid understandings, turned loose upon mankind, with no other business than to sparkle and intrigue, to perplex and to destroy. For my own part, whenever chance brings within my observation, a knot of misses busy at their needles, I consider myself as in THE SCHOOL OF VIRTUE; and though I have no extraordinary skill in plain-work or embroidery, look upon their operations with as much satisfaction as their governesses, because I regard them as providing a security against the most dangerous ensnarers of the soul, by enabling them to exclude *Idleness* from their solitary moments, and with *Idleness*, her attendant train of passions, fancies, chimeras, fears, sorrows, and desires, OVID and CERVANTES will inform them, that LOVE has no power but on those whom he catches unemployed: and HECTOR, in *the Iliad*, when he sees ANDROMACHE overwhelmed with tears, sends her for consolation to the loom and the distaff.*” Certain it is, that wild wishes, and
vain

* ANDROMACHE! my soul's far better part,
Why with untimely sorrows heaves thy heart?
'Tis fate condemns me to the silent tomb,
No hostile hand can antedate my doom.
Fix'd is the term to all the race of earth,
And such the hard condition of our birth,
No force can then resist, no flight can save;
All sink alike, the fearful and the brave.

No

vain imaginations, never take such firm possession of the mind, as when it is found empty and unemployed.

IDLENESS, indeed, was the spreading root from which all the vices and crimes of the oriental nuns so luxuriantly branched. Few of them had any taste for science, or were enabled, by the habits either of reflection or industry, to charm away the tediousness of SOLITUDE, or to relieve that weariness which must necessarily accompany their abstracted situation. The talents with which nature had endowed them were uncultivated; the glimmering lights of reason were obscured by a blind and headlong zeal; and their tempers soured by the circumstances of their forlorn condition. Certain it is, that the only means of avoiding unhappiness and misery in Solitude, and perhaps in Society also, is to keep the

No more—but hasten to thy task at home;
There guide the spindle, and direct the loom:
Me Glory summons to the martial scene;
The field of combat is the sphere of men:
Where heroes war, the foremost place I claim:
The first in danger, as the first in fame.
Thus having said, the glorious chief resumes
His tow'ry helmet, black with shading plumes.
His princess parts with a prophetic sigh;
Unwilling parts, and oft reverts her eye,
That stream'd at every look; then moving slow,
Sought her own palace, and indulg'd her woe.

the mind continually engaged in, or occupied by, some laudable pursuit. The earliest professors of a life of Solitude, although they removed themselves far from the haunts of men, among “caverns deep,” and “deserts idle,” where Nature denied her sons the most common of her blessings, employed themselves in endeavouring to cultivate the rude and barren soil, during those intervals in which they were not occupied in the ordinary labours of religion; and even those whose extraordinary sanctity confined them the whole day to their cells, found the necessity of filling up their leisure, by exercising the manual arts for which they were respectively suited. The rules, indeed, which were originally established in most of the convents, ordained that the time and attention of a monk should never be for a moment vacant or unemployed; but this excellent precept was soon rendered obsolete; and the sad consequences which resulted from its non-observance, we have already, in some degree, described.



CHAPTER THE EIGHTH.

THE CONCLUSION.

THE anxiety with which I have endeavoured to describe THE ADVANTAGES and THE DISADVANTAGES which, under particular circumstances, and in particular situations, are likely to be experienced by those who devote themselves to solitary retirement, may, perhaps, occasion me to be viewed by some as its romantic panegyrist, and by others as its uncandid censor. I shall, therefore, endeavour, in this concluding chapter, to prevent a misconstruction of my opinion, by explicitly declaring the inferences which ought in fairness to be drawn from what I have said.

The advocates for a life of uninterrupted SOCIETY will, in all probability, accuse me of being a morose and gloomy philosopher; an inveterate enemy to social intercourse; who, by recommending a melancholy and sullen seclusion, and interdicting mankind from enjoying the pleasures of life, would sour their tempers, subdue their affections, annihilate the best feelings of the heart, pervert the noble faculty of reason, and

and thereby once more plunge the world into that dark abyfs of barbarifm, from which it has been fo happily refcued by the eftablifhment and civilization of fociety.

The advocates for a life of continual SOLITUDE will moft probably, on the other hand, accufe me of a defign to deprive the fpecies of one of the moft pleafing and fatisfactory delights,* by exciting an unjuft antipathy, raifing an unfounded alarm, depreciating the ufes, and aggravating the abufes, of SOLITUDE ; and by thefe means,

* But the right of indulging this delight, even fuppoſing it to exiſt, is denied by a very able philoſopher. “ Some of theſe ſages,” ſays he, “ that have exerciſed their abilities in the enquiry after the *ſupreme good*, have been of opinion, that the higheſt degree of earthly happineſs is quiet ; a calm repoſe both of mind and body, undiſturbed by the ſight of folly, or the noiſe of buſineſs, the tumults of public commotion, or the agitations of private intereſts : a ſtate in which the mind has no other employment, but to obſerve and regulate her own motions, to trace thought from thought, combine one image with another, raiſe ſyſtems of ſcience, and form theories of virtue. To the ſcheme of theſe ſolitary ſpeculatiſts it has been juſtly objected, that if they are happy, they are happy only by being uſeleſs : that mankind is one vaſt republic, where every individual receives many benefits from the labours of others, which, by labouring in his turn for others, he is obliged to repay ; and that, where the united efforts of all are not able to exempt all from miſery, none have a right to withdraw from their taſk of vigilance, or to be indulged in idle wiſdom, or ſolitary pleaſures.”

means, of endeavouring to encourage that spirit of licentiousness and dissipation, which so strongly marks the degeneracy, and tends to promote the vices of the age.

The respective advocates for these opinions, however, equally mistake the intent and view I had in composing this Treatise. I do sincerely assure them, that it was very far from my intention to cause a relaxation of the exercise of any of the civil duties of life; to impair in any degree the social dispositions of the human heart; to lessen any inclination to rational Retirement; or to prevent the beneficent practice of *self-communion*, which Solitude is best calculated to promote. The fine and generous philanthropy of that mind which, entertaining notions of universal benevolence, seeks to feel a love for, and to promote the good of, the whole human race, can never be injured by an attachment to domestic pleasures, or by cultivating the soft and gentle affections, which are only to be found in the small circles of private life, and can never be truly enjoyed, except in the bosom of LOVE, or the arms of FRIENDSHIP: nor will an occasional and rational retirement from the tumults of the world lessen any of the noble sympathies of the human heart; but, on the contrary, by enlarging those ideas and feelings

feelings, which have sprung from the connections and dependencies which its votary may have formed with individuals, and by generalizing his particular interests and concerns, may enable him to extend the *social principle*, and encrease the circle of his benevolence.

God loves from whole to parts ; but human soul
Must rise from *individual* to *whole*.

Self-love but serves the virtuous mind to wake,
As the small pebble stirs the peaceful lake :
The centre mov'd, a circle strait succeeds ;
Another still, and still another spreads :
Friend, parent, neighbour, first it will embrace ;
His country next ; and next, all human race.

The chief design of this work was to exhibit the necessity of combining the uses of SOLITUDE with those of SOCIETY, to shew, in the strongest light, the advantages they may mutually derive from each other ; to convince mankind of the danger of running into either extreme ; to teach the advocate for UNINTERRUPTED SOCIETY, how highly all the social virtues may be improved, and its vices easily abandoned, by habits of solitary abstraction ; and the advocate for CONTINUAL SOLITUDE, how much that indocility and arrogance of character, which is contracted by a total absence from



Thurston del.

Ridley sc

Petrarch in Solitude.

Vol. 2. Page 302.

from the world, may be corrected by the urbanity of Society, and by the company and conversation of the learned and polite.*

PETRARCH, while in the prime of life, and amidst the happiest exertions of his extraordinary genius, quitted all the seducing charms of society, and retired from Love and *Avignon*, to indulge his mind in literary pursuits, and to relieve his heart from the unfortunate passion by which it was enthralled. No situation he conceived was so favourable for these purposes, as the highly romantic and delightful solitude of *Vaucluse*. It was situated within view of the Mediterranean Sea, in a little valley, inclosed by a semi-circular barrier of rocks, on a plain as beautiful as the
vale

* “I am sure,” says LORD SHAFTSBURY, “that both HOMER and VIRGIL heartily joined in a love of RETIREMENT. Not only the best authors, indeed, but the best company, require this seasoning. Society cannot be rightly enjoyed, without abstinence and separate thought. All grows insipid, dull, and tiresome, without the help of some intervals of retirement. Lovers do not understand the interest of their loves, who, by their good will, would never be parted for a moment. Friends are not discreet who wish to live together on such terms. What relish then must the world have, that common world of mixed and undistinguished company, without a little SOLITUDE? without stepping now and then aside, out of the road and beaten track of life, that tedious circle of noise and shew, which forces wearied mankind to seek relief from every poor diversion?”

vale of *Tempe*. The rocks were high, bold, and grotesque; and the valley was divided by a river, along the banks of which were meadows and pastures of a perpetual verdure. A path, on the left side of the river, led, in gentle windings, to the head of this vast amphitheatre. At the foot of the highest rock, and directly in front of the valley, was a prodigious cavern, hollowed by the hand of Nature, from whence arose a spring almost as celebrated as that of *Helicon*. The gloom of the cavern, which was accessible when the waters were low, was tremendous. It consisted of two excavations; the one forming an arch of sixty feet high; and the other, which was within, of thirty feet. In the centre of this subterraneous rock was an oval basin, of one hundred and eight feet diameter, into which that copious stream which forms the river *SORGIA* rises silently, without even a jet or bubble. The depth of this basin has eluded all attempts to fathom it. In this charming retreat, while he vainly endeavoured, during a period of twenty years, to forget, he enabled himself to endure the absence of his beloved *LAURA*, and to compare, with the highest satisfaction, the pure pleasures of rural retirement with the false joys of a vicious and corrupted court, the manners and principles of which, indeed, he had always had good sense enough to discover and despise.

despise. But this Solitude, with all its charms, could not at length prevent him from returning to the more splendid and busy scenes of public life. The advantages he had derived from a retreat of twenty years, would, he conceived, enable him to mix with the world, without the danger of being corrupted by its vices; and, after reasoning with himself for some time in this way, he suddenly abandoned the peaceful privacy of *Vaucluse*, and precipitated himself into the gayest and most active scenes of a luxurious city. The inhabitants of *Avignon* were amazed to behold the hermit of *Vaucluse*, the tender fugitive from Love, the philosophic contemner of Society, the eloquent champion of Solitude, who could scarcely exist, except in the midst of romantic rocks and flowery forests, shining all at once the bright star of the fashionable hemisphere, and the choice spirit of every private and public entertainment.

We're sadly ignorant, when we hope to find
In shades a med'cine for a troubled mind;
Wan Grief will haunt us wherefoe'er we go,
Sigh in the breeze, and in the streamlet flow:
There pale *Inaction* pines his life away,
And, satiate, curses the return of day:
There Love, insatiate, rages wild with pain,
Endures the blast, or plunges in the main:
There Superstition broods o'er all her fears,
And yells of demons in the zephyr hears.

He

He who a hermit is resolv'd to dwell,
And bid a social life a long farewell,
Is impious —————

It has already been observed, upon the authority of a very accurate and profound observer of nature, that a very extraordinary temperament of mind, and constitution of body, are required to sustain, with tranquillity and endurance, the various fatigues of continued Solitude; and certain it is, that a human creature, who is constantly pent up in seclusion, must, if he be not of a very exalted character, soon become melancholy and miserable. Happiness, like every other valuable quality, cannot be completely possessed, without encountering many dangers, and conquering many difficulties. The prize is great, but the task is arduous. A healthy body, and a vigorous mind, are as essentially necessary to the enterprize, as equal courage and fortitude are to its success. The bold adventurer, who, destitute of these resources, quits the bays and harbours of society, shallow, rocky, and dangerous, as they undoubtedly are, and commits himself to the wild and expansive sea of Solitude, will sink into its deep and disastrous bed, without a hold to save him from destruction. The few instances we have already given, to which many more might easily be added, furnishes unequivocal testimony

testimony of the truth of this grand precept, “*It is not good for a man to be alone;*” which was given by the great Author of Nature, and imprinted in characters sufficiently legible on the human heart.

God never made a solitary man;
T’would jar the concord of his general plan.
Should man through nature solitary roam,
His will his sovereign, every where his home,
What force would guard him from the lion’s jaw?
What swiftness save him from the panther’s paw?
Or should Fate lead him to some safer shore,
Where panthers never prowl, nor lions roar,
Where liberal Nature all her charms bestow,
Suns shine, birds sing, flowers bloom, and waters flow,
Still discontented, though such glories shone,
He’d sigh and murmur to be there alone.

Content cannot be procured, except by social intercourse, or a judicious communion with those whom congenial tastes, and similar talents and dispositions, point out for our companions. The civilization of man, from whence the species derive such happy consequences, results entirely from a proper management of the *social principle*: even the source of his support, the amelioration of the otherwise rude and unprofitable earth, can only be attained by social combination. How erroneous a notion, therefore, must the minds of those men have formed of “their
VOL. II. P “beings”

“ beings’ end and aim,” and how strong must their antipathies to the species be, who, like a certain celebrated French hermit, would chuse a station among the craters of VESUVIUS, as a place which afforded them greater security than the society of mankind ! The idea of being able to produce our own happiness from the stores of amusement and delight which we ourselves may possess, independently of all communication with or assistance from others, is certainly extremely flattering to the natural pride of man ; but even if this were possible, and that a solitary enthusiast could work up his feelings to a higher and more lasting degree of felicity than an active inhabitant of the world, amidst all its seducing vices, and enchanting follies, is capable of enjoying, it would not follow that SOCIETY is not the province of all those whom peculiar circumstances has not unfitted for its duties and enjoyments. It is, indeed, a false and deceitful notion, that a purer stream of happiness is to be found in the delightful bowers of Solitude than in the busy walks of men. Neither of these stations enjoy exclusively this envied stream ; for it flows along the vale of peace, which lies between the two extremes ; and those who follow it with a steady pace, without deviating too widely from its brink on either side, will reach its source, and taste it at its spring. But devious,
to

to a certain degree, must be the walk ; for the enjoyments of life are best attained by being varied with judgment and discretion. The finest joys grow nauseous to the taste when the cup of pleasure is drained to its dregs. The highest delight loses its attraction by too frequent recurrence. It is only by a proper mixture and combination of the pleasures of Society with those of Solitude, of the gay and lively recreations of the world with the serene and tranquil satisfactions of Retirement, that we can enjoy each in its highest relish. Life is intolerable without society ; and society loses half its charms by being too eagerly and constantly pursued. Society, indeed, by bringing men of congenial minds and similar dispositions together, and uniting them by a community of pursuits, and a reciprocal sympathy of interests, may greatly assist the cause of TRUTH and VIRTUE, by advancing the means of human knowledge, and multiplying the ties of human affections ; and so far as the festive board, the lively dance, the brilliant coterie, and other elegant and fashionable pastimes, contribute to these ends, they are truly valuable, and deserve not only encouragement, but approbation. On this principle the various clubs which are formed by artisans, and other inferior orders in society, ought to be respected. The mind, in order to preserve

its useful activity and proper tone, must be occasionally relaxed, which cannot be so beneficially effected, as by means of associations founded on the pursuit of some common pleasure. A friendly meeting, or a social entertainment, exhilarates the spirits, exercises the faculties of the mind, calls forth the feelings of the heart, and creates, when properly formed and indulged, a reciprocity of kindness, confidence, and esteem. It softens the severity of virtue, while it strengthens and enforces its effects. I therefore sincerely exhort my disciples not to absent themselves morosely from public places,* nor to avoid the social throng; which cannot fail to afford to judicious, rational, and feeling minds, many subjects both of amusement and instruction. It is true, that we cannot relish the pleasures, and taste the advantages, of society, without being able to give a patient

* "To every place of public entertainment," says an English writer "we go with expectation and desire of being pleased; we meet with others who are brought by the same motives; no one will be the first to own the disappointment: one face reflects the smile of another, till each believes the rest delighted, and endeavours to catch and to transmit the circulating rapture. In time, all are deceived by the cheat to which all contribute. The fiction of happiness is propagated by every tongue, and confirmed by every look, till at last all profess the joy which they do not feel; consent to yield to the general delusion; and when the voluntary dream is at an end, lament that bliss is of so short a duration."

patient hearing to the tongue of folly, to excuse error, to bear with infirmity, to view mediocrity of talents without scorn, and illiberality of sentiment without retort; to indulge frivolity of behaviour; and even to forgive rudeness of manners; but the performance of these conditions meets with its own reward; for it is scarcely credible, how very much our own tempers and dispositions are ameliorated, and our understandings improved, by bearing with the different tempers, and humoring the perverse dispositions, of others: we experience by such a conduct the high delight of pleasing others, and the great advantage of improving ourselves.

Delightful, however, as social pleasures naturally are to the human mind; necessary as they certainly are, under proper regulations, to the preservation of the spirits; and beneficial as they may undoubtedly be rendered, by judicious choice and wise reflection, it is not every person who withdraws himself from the highly-coloured scenes of public life, to the shades of privacy and retirement, that deserves the imputation generally cast on such characters, of being inclined to sullenness and misanthropy. There are many who seek the retreats of Solitude for the very purpose of rendering their efforts more useful to Society; many who relinquish the endearments of private friendship,

and the applauses of public approbation, only the more nobly to deserve them; and many, whose souls are so bitterly tormented by the anguish of misfortune, and the sickness of sorrow, that they find no relief from society, and recede from its scenes, to avoid giving disturbance to that gaiety which they are incapable of enjoying, and to prevent their fractious feelings from molesting any but themselves. There are others who retire from the world, to pursue objects the most glorious to the individual, and most useful to mankind; the attainment of which can only be hoped for from the advantages which Solitude affords. Glowing with a sublime and generous spirit, they sacrifice the joys of life, the charms of society, and even the advantages of health, to shew their attachment to the species; and, immured from the sight of this world, toil, with indefatigable industry, for its benefit, without expecting any other reward than the satisfaction resulting from the sense of having promoted the interest, and advanced the happiness, of their fellow-creatures.* So also,

Sage

* The superior and highly exalted character which ZIMMERMAN seems to have had in view in this latter description, has been very finely drawn by that great statesman and philosopher LORD BOLINGBROKE, in his celebrated Letter "*On the Spirit of Patriotism*." "The Author of Nature," says his Lordship,

Sage Reflection, bent with years ;
 Conscious Virtue, void of fears ;
 Muffled Silence, wood-nymph shy ;
 Meditation's piercing eye ;

P 4

Halcyon

Lordship, " has thought fit to mingle, from time to time, among the societies of men, a few, and but a few, of those on whom he is graciously pleased to bestow a larger portion of the *ethereal spirit* than is given in the ordinary course of his providence to the sons of men. These are they who engross almost the whole reason of the species, who are born to instruct, to guide, and to preserve; who are designed to be the tutors and the guardians of human-kind. When they prove such, they exhibit to us examples of the highest virtue; and they deserve to have their festivals kept, instead of that pack of *Anchorites* and *Enthusiasts*, with whose names the calendar is crowded and disgraced: But when these men apply their talents to other purposes, when they strive to be GREAT, and despise being GOOD, they commit a most sacrilegious breach of trust; they pervert the means; they defeat, as far as in them lies, the designs of Providence; and disturb, in some sort, the system of infinite Wisdom. The talents of these men denote their *general designation*; and the opportunities of conforming themselves to it that arise in the course of things, or that are presented to them by any circumstances of rank and situation in the society to which they belong, denote the *particular vocation* which it is not lawful for them to resist, or even to neglect. Characters of this sort are distinguished by nature so essentially from the herd of mankind, that they seem to be of another species. They come into the world, or at least continue in it, after the effects of surprise and inexperience are over, like men who are sent on important errands: they observe with distinction; they admire with knowledge: they may indulge themselves in pleasure; but as their industry is not employed about trifles, so their amusements are not made the business of their lives. If they retire
 from

Halcyon Peace, on moss reclin'd ;
Retrospect, that fears the mind ;
Rapt, earth-gazing Reverie ;
Blushing, artless Modesty ;
Health, that snuffs the morning air ;
Full-ey'd Truth, with bosom bare ;
Inspiration, Nature's child,
Seek the solitary wild.

The state of the mind, if properly consulted, will discover whether Solitude may be safely indulged. The bosom that, amidst the gay delights and luxurious pleasures of the world, feels a rising discontent and uneasiness, may try the retreats of Solitude without danger ; and if, after a certain period, an attachment to its mild and tranquil scenes continue, and the heart enjoys that quietude and content which it before so vainly wished to experience, Society may be advantageously relinquished. The patient may, under such circumstances, safely indulge the natural inclinations of the mind, and gratify the
habitual

from the world, their splendor accompanies them, and enlightens even the obscurity of their retreat. If they take a part in public life, the effect is never indifferent : they either appear like ministers of Divine vengeance, and their course through the world is marked by desolation and oppression, by poverty and servitude ; or they are the guardian angels of the country they inhabit, busy to avert even the most distant evil, and to maintain or to procure peace, plenty, and, the greatest of human blessings, LIBERTY."

habitual feelings of his heart : he may then exclaim, in the language of the poet,

“ Oh ! snatch me swift from those tumultuous scenes
To lonely groves and sweetly verdant greens,
To where Religion, Peace and Comfort dwell,
And chear with heavenly rays the lonely cell :
To where no ruffling winds, no raging seas,
Disturb the mind amidst its pensive ease :
Each passion calm ; where mild affections shine,
The soul enjoying quietude divine :
Unknown in private or in public strife,
Soft sailing down the placid stream of life :
Aw'd by no terrors, by no cares perplex'd,
My life, a gentle passage to the next.”

But when that delightful tranquillity of mind, which an excess of social pleasures has impaired or destroyed, is not restored to its original purity by the uninterrupted quietude of seclusion, it may fairly be concluded, that there is some natural and constitutional defect, that defeats the remedy, and prevents the soul from tasting that serenity which is so essential to the enjoyment of human happiness. Under such circumstances it is dangerous to indulge the pleasures of Solitude : the sufferer should fly back to Society ; cultivate the duties of active life ; and solicit, with temperate indulgence, its more agreeable enjoyments. For although the pleasures and occupations of the world cannot eradicate this species of intellectual

disease, they may, by being judiciously followed, suspend its progress, and alleviate its pangs. That case must always be desperate, when the antidote is too weak to reach the poison, or to counteract its operation. A pious resignation to his fate can alone afford relief; and the language of such a sufferer must be,

“ Oh ! as it pleases thee, thou Power Supreme,
To drive my bark thro’ life’s more rapid stream,
If lowering storms my destin’d course attend,
And ocean rage ’till this black voyage end,
Let ocean rage, and storms indignant roar,
I bow submissive, and resign’d adore :
Resign’d adore, in various changes tried ;
Thy own lov’d Son my anchor and my guide :
Resign’d adore whate’er thy will decree ;
My faith in Jesus, and my hope in Thee,
And humbly wait till, thro’ a sea of woes,
I reach the wish’d-for harbour of repose.”

There are, however, circumstances under which it is absolutely necessary to retire from the world, in order to avoid the recurrence of sentiments and feelings that are pregnant with unhappiness. To a mind that feels an unconquerable disgust of the manners and maxims of a world which it cannot reform ; to a heart that turns with horror from the various sights the world exhibits of human woe, which he is incapable of relieving ; to a bosom that is stung by the
the

the various vices which he cannot prevent or restrain, and which are hourly practised among the sons of men, Retirement becomes an obligation which the justice that every good man owes to his own felicity demands. The impulse to Solitude may in such case be conscientiously indulged, in the firmest confidence of its rectitude. It is a retreat necessary to the preservation, not only of happiness, but of virtue; and the world itself may be benefited by its effects. Removed from the sad scenes of incivility, wretchedness, and guilt, the tender feelings of pity are regulated with composure; the mind views its own operations with nicer discrimination; the high sense of virtue is rendered less indignant; and the hatred against vice more temperate and discerning. The violent emotions which created the disgusting pain, gently subside; and as our reflections on the condition of human nature prevail, the soul feels how incumbent it is to endeavour to bear with the follies, to alleviate the miseries, and to reform the vices of mankind; while the leisure and quietude which Solitude affords, enables A MAN, who has thus retired, to point out the most likely means of accomplishing the ends which his lonely meditation, and philanthropic feelings, have generously inspired.

“ With aspect mild, and elevated eye,
Behold him seated on a mount serene,

Above the fogs of sense, and passion's storm.
All the black cares and tumults of this life,
Like harmless thunder breaking at his feet,
Excite his pity, not impair his peace.
Earth's genuine sons, the scepter'd and the slave,
A mingled mob ! a wandering herd ! he sees
Bewilder'd in the vale ; in all unlike,
His full reverse in all ! What higher praise ?
What stronger demonstration of the right ?
Himself too much he prizes to be proud,
And nothing thinks so great in man as MAN.
Too dear he holds man's interest, to neglect
Another's welfare, or his right invade.
Wrong he sustains with temper, looks on heaven,
Nor stoops to think his injurer his foe ;
But looks with gentle pity round, to find
How he can best relieve another's woe,
Or hush the vicious passions into peace.

Those who have passed their lives in the domestic privacies of retirement ; who have been only used to the soft and gentle offices of FRIENDSHIP, and to the tender endearments of LOVE ; who have formed their notion of VIRTUE from those bright images which the purity of RELIGION, the perfection of MORAL SENTIMENTS, and the feelings of an affectionate heart, have planted in their minds ; are too apt to yield to the abhorrence and disgust they must unavoidably feel on a first view of the artificial manners and unblushing vices of the world. Issuing from the calm retreats of simplicity and innocence, and
fondly

fondly hoping to meet with more enlarged perfection in the world, their amiable, just and benevolent dispositions are shocked at the four severities, the sordid selfishness, the gross injustice, the base artifices, and the inhuman cruelties, which deform the fairest features of social life, and disgrace the best-framed fabric of human polity. Revolting, however, as this disappointment must certainly be, and grievously as the feelings of such characters must be wounded on their entering the world, it is a cowardly desertion of their duty to shrink from the task, and withdraw their services from their fellow-creatures. Constituted as society is, human happiness, and the improvement of the species, materially depends upon the active concurrence of every individual in the general scheme of nature; and the man who withholds his assistance to promote the public good, loosens or destroys a link in that chain of things by which the whole is intended to be kept together and preserved. The doctrine, therefore, cannot be too forcibly inculcated, that it is indispensably incumbent on every individual so to accommodate himself to the manners of his contemporaries, and the temper of the times, that he may have an opportunity of promoting the happiness of others while he increases his own; of extending the scale of human knowledge by his
social

social industry ; of relieving distress by his bounty ; and of exhibiting the deformities of VICE, and the beauties of VIRTUE, both by his precepts and example. And this sacred obligation, by which every good man feels himself so firmly bound to promote the welfare and happiness of his fellow-creatures, of course enjoins him to shun, with equal perseverance, the giddy multitude in their pursuits of lawless pleasure, and to avoid the thoughtless votaries, and baneful orgies, of wit, intemperance, and sensual debauchery. This is best effected by every individual forming a rational scheme of domestic enjoyment, and engaging in some useful occupation, in which neither the frivolous pursuits of the vainly busy, the ostentatious parade of the richly proud, the faithless pleasures of the unthinking gay, the insatiable anxieties of avarice, nor the distracting compunctions of vice, shall form any part ; but in which, with a few amiable and faithful friends, he shall pass the intervals of virtuous industry, or charitable exertion, in the bosom of a fond and cheerful family, whose mutual endearments and affections, will confer on each other the highest happiness human nature is capable of enjoying.

Active in indolence, abroad who roam
In quest of HAPPINESS which dwells at HOME,
With vain pursuits fatigu'd, at length will find
Its real dwelling is a virtuous mind.

RETIREMENT,

RETIREMENT, however, when it is not inconsistent with our duties to Society, or injurious to those family interests which it is one of our principal foundations of happiness to promote, is capable of producing the most beneficial effects on our minds. The self-communion which must accompany a wise and rational Solitude, not only fosters and confirms our virtuous inclinations, but detects and expels those latent vices which have secretly crept into and corrupted the heart. It induces a habit of contemplation, which invigorates the faculties of the soul; raises them to the highest energies; and directs them to purposes more elevated and noble, than it was possible for them amidst the business and pleasures of public life to attain. It tends, indeed, to unfold the powers of the mind to so great an extent, that we are ashamed of having thought that our talents were confined within the limits we had prescribed, and blush at the ignorance and cowardice by which we were deceived. The activity of genius is unlimited, and the measure of its effects depends entirely upon a steady exertion of its powers. A courageous and persevering industry is capable of surmounting every difficulty, and of performing the highest achievements. A sense of intellectual weakness, so far from being indulged, ought to be combated with fortitude and resolution,

tion, until it is compleatly destroyed. The human mind, like a noble tree, extends its branches widely round, and raises them to the skies, in proportion as the soil on which it grows is more or less cultivated and manured; but not being fixed to any certain spot, its growth may be improved to any size, by transplanting it to the soil in which it most delights to dwell. By that firm reliance on its natural strength, that indefatigable exertion of its improved powers, that steady observance of its successful operations, and that warm and active zeal for excellence to which it is invited by the advantages, and encouraged by the opportunities, which seclusion affords, it will ascend from one stage of improvement to another, from acquisition to acquisition; and, by a gradual and steady progress, reach a comprehensive elevation, as great and surprising as it was once thought visionary and unattainable. To these sublime and noble efforts of human intellect, SOLITUDE is the sincerest guide, and most powerful auxiliary; and he who aspires to mental and moral excellence, whose soul is anxious to become both GREAT and GOOD, will of course seek its inspiring shades.

SOLITUDE, indeed, under any circumstances, can only become injurious by being carried to excess, or by being misapplied: And what is there
that

that will not, by being abused or misapplied, be rendered equally injurious? The highest advantages Society is capable of conferring, the loftiest flights of fancy, the best affections of the heart, the greatest strength of body, the happiest activity of mind, the elements of fire and water, the blessings of liberty, and, in short, all the excellent gifts of Providence, as well as all the ingenious contrivances of man, may, by these means, be perverted, their uses destroyed, their ends and objects defeated, and their operations and effects rendered extensively mischievous and detrimental.

The general advantages which SOLITUDE is certainly capable of producing, cannot be lessened by conceding to its adversaries, that it is, when sought under unfavourable circumstances, inauspicious to human happiness. It would be overstepping the sacred boundaries of TRUTH, and violating the rights of CANDOUR, not to admit, that IRRATIONAL SOLITUDE frequently overclouds the reason, contracts the understanding, vitiates the manners, inflames the passions, corrupts the imagination, sours the temper, and debases the whole character of its votaries. Nor is it necessary to deny that many of them, instead of employing the delightful leisure which Retirement affords, to hush the jarring passions, to chastise the fancy, to elevate and adorn the mind,
and

and to reform and ameliorate the heart, have been too often occupied in the most frivolous pursuits, and in the indulgence of the most sordid and criminal desires. But these instances in which the pure and peaceful retreats of Solitude have been tainted and disturbed by the vicious and turbulent desires of the world, only demonstrate the infirm, corrupt and imperfect nature of the species, and do not in the smallest degree depreciate the value of those high advantages which result from occasional and well-regulated SOLITUDE.

It is said by a celebrated German writer, in a poetical personification of SOLITUDE, that *she* holds in one hand a cup of bliss, in which *she* presents unceasing sweets to the lips of the happy; and in the other grasps an envenomed dagger, which *she* plants with increasing tortures in the bosom of the wretched: but this must be considered as the language of the muse, and a mere flight of poetic fancy; except, indeed, so far as it tends to enforce the idea, that VIRTUE will always be happy, and VICE for ever miserable; for Retirement, while it pours the balm of comfort into the aching bosom of the unfortunate, and offers a cordial cheering as nectar to the drooping spirits of the WISE and VIRTUOUS, only

only operates as a corrosive, agonizing poison on the constitutions of the WEAK and VICIOUS.

It is a gross mistake to suppose that the pleasures of social life are incompatible with the benefits to be derived from Solitude. They may not only be intermingled with, but made mutually to aid and augment each other. SOLITUDE may surely be enjoyed without undergoing an exile from the world; and SOCIETY may be freely mixed with, without absolutely renouncing the pleasures of Retirement. The circumstances of life, indeed, call loudly on every mind to interchange the pursuits of activity with scenes of quietude and repose. The alliance of Solitude and Society is necessary to the perfection not only of the intellectual character, but to the corporeal constitution of man. To conclude that the duties of life must necessarily be neglected by devoting a portion of our time to Solitude, is much more erroneous than to conclude, that those duties are not always fulfilled amidst the pleasures or business of Society.

Daily observation proves most clearly, that many of the charms, and some of the benefits, of rural retreat, may be enjoyed without retiring to any very considerable distance from the metropolis, the seat of social joys and interested

terested activity. PETRARCH, during his residence in the city of *Parma*, though extremely flattered by the friendship shewn him, was glad to steal from public life as often as he could, and to indulge the high delight he naturally felt in wandering through the fields and woods which surrounded the metropolis. One day, led by his love of exercise, he passed the river of *Lenza*, which is three miles from *Parma*, and found himself in the territory of *Rhegio*, in a great forest, which is called *Silva Piana*, or Low Wood; though it is situated upon a hill, from whence are discovered THE ALPS, and all CISALPINE GAUL. Aged oaks, whose heads seemed to touch the clouds, sheltered the avenues of the forest from the rays of the sun; while the fresh breezes, which descended from the neighbouring mountains, and the little rivulets which brawled along its skirts, tempered the meridian heats of the day, and preserved to the earth, even in the greatest droughts, a soft verdure, enamelled with the finest flowers. Birds of every kind warbled forth their rural songs from the thick coverts, while deer, and every animal of the chase, sported through the purlieus. In the middle of this beautiful forest Nature had formed a romantic theatre, which, from its enchanting decorations, she seemed to have designed for the residence of the Muses. The charms of this delightful retreat struck the
mind

mind of PETRARCH with a sort of inspiration, and revived so strongly his original taste for Solitude, that, on his return to *Parma*, he endeavoured to procure some spot near the environs of the city, to which he might occasionally retire from the fatigues of his archdeaconry, and indulge his mind in the blessings of innocence, and the delights of rural repose. The industry of his enquiries soon furnished him with a small cottage, exactly suited to his wishes, situated at the end of the city, near the abbey of *St. Anthony*. To this place he fondly and frequently retired, whenever he could escape from the duties of his church, and the invitations of his friends. The superiority of his talents had at this time attracted the attention and applause of mankind; and his engaging manners secured to him the respect and esteem of the nobles of *Parma*, who besieged him with the most friendly and flattering importunities to partake of their daily parties of pleasure. PETRARCH, however, had formed notions of happiness very foreign to those which result from the society of luxurious lords, or fashionable females, to whom, in general, poetry afforded no delight, nor philosophy instruction; and the companions to whom he could afford neither amusement or information, were not likely to afford him much satisfaction. The quiet and simple pleasures of Retirement were more delightful to his mind than

than all the elegancies and splendors of *Parma* : but this partiality to Retirement did not induce him to renounce the rational society which a few select friends, with whom he had closely connected himself, was occasionally capable of affording him. “ So conveniently,” says he, “ is
“ this delightful cottage situated, that I enjoy
“ all the advantages of rural retirement, and
“ yet retain within my reach all the pleasures with which this gay and elegant city
“ abounds. The society of a few select friends
“ recreates my mind whenever it is distracted
“ by the anxieties of study, or stagnated by the
“ stillness of Solitude ; and when I am satiated
“ with the pleasures of the town, I fly with
“ rapture to the sweet repose, and to all the
“ interesting and endearing occupations of this
“ charming retreat. Oh ! may the kindness of
“ Fortune long indulge me in the enjoyment of
“ this neutral state ; this happy alternation of
“ rural tranquillity and convivial solace ; a state
“ of felicity to which neither the anchorites of
“ Egypt, nor the philosophers of Greece, ever
“ attained. In this humble abode let me quietly pass the remainder of my days, unse-
“ duced by the charms of greatness, and un-
“ terrupted by the pleasures of the world. Fly,
“ all ye vain delusions, and fantastic dreams,
“ from this cottage of content, and seek
“ your

5

“ your native territories, the palaces of princes,
“ and the altars of ambition !” The voice of
WISDOM and VIRTUE calls aloud on every man
to adopt the scheme of happiness which PE-
TRARCH so successfully practised. By thus di-
viding our time between the busy cares and inno-
cent amusements of public life, and the studious
and tranquil pleasures of Retirement, between
the gay pursuits of personal gratifications, and
the more noble and elevated exercises of intel-
lect, we may avoid the dangers of contracting
on the one hand, a passion for light and frivolous
dissipation, and on the other, a joyless disposition
to misanthropic severity; and may shun most, if
not all, of the evil consequences which either
SOLITUDE or SOCIETY is capable of producing,
which, when indulged irrationally or indiscreet-
ly, in general prove the SCYLLA or CHARYBDIS
of our lives.

These are the observations which it has oc-
curred to me to make upon the advantages and
disadvantages with which these important means
of human happiness are respectively pregnant.
I can truly say, that I have felt, whenever the
cares of life, and duties of my profession, have
allowed me leisure to retire, the most sublime and
satisfactory enjoyment from SOLITUDE; and I
sincerely wish that every one who is disposed to
taste

taste it, may receive the same comfort and pleasure from its charms. But I exhort them, while they enjoy the sacred blessings of repose, not to neglect the SOCIAL VIRTUES, the consolations of FRIENDSHIP, or the endearments of LOVE; but so manage the wants of nature, and arrange the business and concerns of life, as to find an adequate portion of leisure for the noble duties of Retirement, as well as for the company and conversation of the world. May they, in short, enjoy the admiration and esteem of their friends, and a complacent approbation of their own conduct, without losing that relish for the pleasures of rational Retirement, by which alone these high advantages are most likely to be gained.

To love all mankind, and to promote, to the utmost of our power, the happiness of all those with whom we are more intimately connected, is the highest injunction both of morality and religion. But this important duty certainly does not require that we should surrender ourselves with servile obedience, or abject submission, to any one, however superior he may be either in talents, in station, or in merit. On the contrary, it is the duty of every one not only to cultivate the inclination, but to reserve the power of retiring occasionally from the world, without indulging

indulging a disposition to renounce its society or condemn its manners. While we assert, with manly resolution, the independent spirit of human nature, our HAPPINESS may be considerably augmented, by extracting from the multitudinous affairs of the world, the various enjoyments and wise instructions it is capable of affording. SOCIETY is the school of WISDOM, and SOLITUDE the temple of VIRTUE. In the one we learn the art of living with comfort among our fellow-creatures; and in the other, of living with quietude by ourselves. A total retreat from the world would lay us aside from that part which Providence chiefly intended us to act; but without occasional retreat, it is certain that we must act that part very ill. There will be neither consistency in the conduct, nor dignity in the character, of one who sets apart no share of his time for meditation and reflection. “In the heat and bustle of life,” says an eloquent preacher, “while passion is every moment throwing false colours on the objects around us, nothing can be viewed in a just light. If you wish that Reason should exert her native power, you must step aside from the crowd into the cool and silent shade. It is thus that with sober and steady eye she examines what is good or ill, what is wise or foolish, in human conduct: she looks back on the past; she looks forward to the future; and forms plans not

for the present moment only, but for the whole life. How should that man discharge any part of his duty aright, who never suffers his passions to cool? and how should his passions cool, who is engaged, without interruption, in the tumults of the world? This incessant stir may be called *the perpetual drunkenness of life*. It raises that eager fermentation of spirit, which will be ever sending forth the dangerous fumes of rashness and folly. Whereas he who mingles RATIONAL RETREAT with WORLDLY AFFAIRS, remains calm, and master of himself. He is not whirled round, and rendered giddy, by the agitation of the world; but from that SACRED RETIREMENT in which he has been conversant among higher objects, comes forth into the world with manly tranquillity, fortified by principles which he has formed, and prepared for whatever may befall."

Sweet SOLITUDE! when life's gay hours are past,
Howe'er we range, in thee we fix at last.

Toss'd through tempestuous seas, the voyage o'er,
Pale we look back, and bless thy friendly shore.

Our own strict judges, our past life we scan,

And ask if glory hath enlarg'd the span:

If bright the prospect, we the grave defy,

Trust future ages, and contented die.

America FINIS. *Charles Taylor*

INDEX.

A.

A*ABELARD*, his history, 228; his first acquaintance with *Eloisa*, 229; their mutual love, 230; its consequences, 231; extracts from their letters, 232, 243; founds the *Paraclete*, and makes *Eloisa* the abbess of it, 270; endeavours to reform the manners of the monks, 271; becomes abbot of *St. Gildas*, 272; his complaints of the misconduct of his fraternity, 273.

Affection, when virtuous, is the perpetual sun-shine of the mind, 5.

Age, poetical description of a divine old man, 69.

Ambition is not lessened merely by change of scene, 107, notis; prevails in different degrees as well in cottages as in courts, 219.

Ambrosius, bishop of *Camadola*, his endeavours to reform the monks, 288.

Andromache, her parting with *Hector*, 302, notis.

Anger, the consequences of indulging it, 69.

Anthony St. a description of the conduct of this extraordinary hermit, 138.

Argenteuil, the convent of, in which *Eloisa* took the veil, and of which she had the management, suppressed on account of the irregularities of the nuns, 268.

I N D E X.

Aristotle, his opinion that man was born for Society, 1 ; his profound systems not pursued in the tumults of a court, 98.

Armelle, a celebrated French saint, an instance of her fanatic disposition, 167.

Avarice, the passion of not cured by Solitude, 167, notis.

Aurelian, the Roman emperor, alleviates the captivity of *Zenobia* by presenting her with an elegant villa in the vicinity of *Rome*, 42.

Authors who attempt to reform the manners, or correct the false opinions of the age, are in general decried, 67 ; ought not to be discouraged by the attacks of envy and ingratitude, 95 ; many oppressed by the ignorance with which their works are criticised, 96 ; the effects of Solitude on their manners, 117, 128 ; why they frequently renounce Society, 125, 127 ; not always properly treated by men of the world, 131 ; sometimes quarrel with their friends for not supporting their doctrines, however whimsical or absurd, 134 ; a morose and surly pedant described, 135 ; a meritorious author described, 136.

B.

Bacon's observation on the saying, that "*Whoever is delighted in Solitude, is either a wild beast or a god,*" 24, notis.

Benevolence a moral duty ; its effects on human happiness, 68 ; on what occasion it ought to be exercised,

I N D E X.

- 70; is the offspring of Religion, 101; a great virtue, and capable of conferring the highest delight, 132.
- Bigotry* the production of irrational Solitude, 166.
- Blair, Dr.* his opinion of the importance of religious Retirement, 101.
- Boccace*, the Italian writer, condemned for censuring too freely the vices of the monks, 287.
- Bossus*, a celebrated canon of the fifteenth century, appointed by *Sextus the Fourth* to inspect the monasteries, 289.
- Boswell's* harsh expression respecting *Hume's* religious opinion condemned, 58, notis.
- Brocklesby, Dr.* attends *Johnson* in his last illness, 200.

C.

- Cæsar*, an observation of his on the subject of ambition, 219.
- Callistratus*, the Athenian orator, excites the admiration of *Demosthenes*, and induces him to study rhetoric, 88.
- Captive*, the story of a female illustrative of the irresistible power of love, 249, 257.
- Carlini*, the celebrated French comedian, an anecdote respecting his dejected disposition of mind, 182.
- Cat*, the sisterhoods of several convents take it into their heads to mew like cats, 163; *Timotheus*, an Egyptian monk, so called, 274.
- Celibacy*, its absurdity, 262.
- Character*, a good and great one described, 318, notis; a philanthropic one described, 323, 324.

I N D E X.

Charles the Fifth resigns the government of the empire, and retires into Solitude, 44 ; description of his retreat, 45.

Cheerfulness must arise from the heart, and is the surest symptom of a happy mind, 14, notis ; produced to a high degree by temperance and exercise, 112.

Christina, queen of Sweden, her exposition of the awkwardness of *Miebm* and *Naude*, two authors of great eminence on the subjects of music and dancing, 123.

CHRISTIANITY, its excellency, 165, 285, 291.

Chrysostom, St. his opinion of marriage, 265 ; his history, 278 ; the severity of his measures to procure a reformation of the dissolute manners of the monks excite a rebellion, 279 ; he is deposed from the archbishopric of Constantinople by the empress *Eudoxia*, and driven into exile, 280, 281 ; the fury with which he is attacked in his journey to *Mount Taurus* by the insurgent monks, 282 ; description of his place of exile ; his death ; and the honours paid by the emperor *Theodosius* to his memory, 283, notis.

Cicero insists that absolute Solitude is incompatible with the nature of man ; devoted to the elegant occupations of literature and philosophy, 36 ; fond of rational retirement, 38 ; his fame, in the opinion of *Petrarch*, contributed to his destruction, 71.

Compliment, an awkward one paid to an elegant lady, 125.

Confidence, its nature to be always in danger, 257.

Contempt, closely allied to hatred, 76.

Content, the fountain of it must spring up in the mind, 51, notis ; cannot be enjoyed without social intercourse, 312.

Conversation

I N D E X.

Conversation qualifies the mind for Solitude. 7 ; can never be pleasing in a person who betrays an ambition to shine on any subject, 118.

Convents, their pernicious consequences described, 164 ; the social virtues unknown in them, 224 ; the enmities which prevail therein, 225 ; suppressed on account of the licentious manners of the nuns, 268 ; the useful regulation of them, by *St. Benedict*, discontinued, 271.

Cornelia, her exclamation after the death of Pompey the Great, 269.

Country, its inhabitants mimic the manners of the metropolis, 9 ; description of the character of a country magistrate, 223 ; the disadvantages of living in a country village, 221, 223.

Country 'Squire, his style of pleasure, 219.

Courtiers, their envious and malevolent conduct described, 73 ; their hatred of favourites, 74 ; of *Dionysius* endeavour to destroy *Dion*, 75.

Cowley, the English poet, afflicted with the *hypochondria*, 50.

Cruelty, the indolent and lazy are generally cruel, 277.

D.

Death, the idea of it disturbs the intellectual system, 199 ; the effect which the approach of it had on the mind of *Dr. Johnson*, 200 ; its terrors may be totally subdued by Retirement, 85.

Delight, to view it in others without enjoying their happiness, is a symptom of bad character, 84.

I N D E X.

Demosthenes, his fame contributed to his destruction, 71 ; induced to study oratory by the example and success of *Callistratus* when pleading the cause of the city of *Oropus*, 88 ; his manner of speaking improved by *Satyrus*, the comedian, 88 ; retires to a subterranean study, that he might uninterruptedly practise the arts of eloquence, 89.

Devotion, a wrong notion of it, 170 ; in what it really consists, 170.

Dioclesian abdicated the empire when only fifty years of age, 39 ; retires into Solitude at *Salona*, 40.

Dion, the deliverer of *Sicily*, his pre-eminent merit, 74 ; ingratiates himself into the good opinion of *Dionysius*, and excites the hatred of that tyrant's courtiers, 75 ; he endeavours to reform the mind of *Dionysius*, by a course of liberal studies, 75.

Domestic Happiness, how to be enjoyed, 326.

Draco, his excellent laws to prevent idleness, 296.

Druids, devoted to solitary study, 90.

E.

Eloisa, her acquaintance with *Abelard*, 229 ; their mutual affection, 230 ; retires into the convent of *Argenteuil*, 231 ; her passion revived by intercepting *Abelard's* letter to *Philintus*, 232 ; the consequences of this letter described, 233 ; their correspondence, 234, 244 ; observations on the nature of her passion for *Abelard*, 244 ; her conduct in the convent of *Argenteuil*, 268 ; her conduct when she took the veil, 269 ;
her

I N D E X.

her exemplary behaviour when she became abbess of *the Paraclete*, 270.

England, an account of the fate which attended the publication of *Hume's* history of it, 62.

Enthusiasm described, 143; a root from which, when properly cultivated, the noblest actions spring, 144; *Locke's* description of it, 147; a source of delusion, 160; continually at war with the dictates of nature, 286.

Envy, an enemy to fine talents, 53; its victims generally raised into notice by Truth, 54; pursues Merit as its shadow, 54, 67; its effects on the conduct and character of *David Hume*, 55; the effects of it defeated by the impartiality of strangers, 94.

Ephesians banished every man who dared to become more eminent than his fellow-citizens, 67.

Errors, an attempt to expose them always attended with obloquy, 67.

Eudoxia, the consort of the emperor *Arcadius*, her vices exposed by *St. Chrysostom*, 280.

Exercise more necessary than rest to keep both the body and the mind in proper order, 111; its effects upon the spirits, 112.

F.

Fancy, its finest flights incapable of being truly enjoyed in absolute Solitude, 2; its danger to the youthful mind, 139; how she performs her operations, 140; its effects in Solitude, 160; when it may be safely indulged, 170.

I N D E X.

Fame excites the malice of the ignorant and stupid, 53 ; its temple difficult of access, 59 ; to be durable, must be founded on virtue, 71.

Fanaticism, those who are under its influence can feel no enjoyment from Solitude, 100 ; it is the child of discontent, 101 ; defined, 146 ; *Mr. Locke's* account of its cause, 147 ; not confined to any age or country, 148 ; instances of its effects in the case of *Lord George Gordon*, 149, 153 ; of *Dr. Fothergill*, 154 ; of the holy *St. Francis*, of *Affisi*, 156 ; its accompaniments, 166.

Father Paul, the excellency of his character, 284.

Festivity, its joys neither pure nor satisfactory, 11.

Fitzosborne's Letters, one on the subject of Suicide and Melancholy, 178, notis.

Folly necessary to be endured in order to enjoy society, 317.

Fothergill, Dr. an anecdote of his eccentricity when a student at *Edinburgh*, 155.

Francis, St. of Affisi, his conversion, fervent piety, and fanaticism, described, 156.

Franklin, Dr. an eulogy on his happy stile of conveying moral information, 129.

Frederick the Great discovers his inclination for tranquillity, 34 ; his enjoyment of it at his celebrated retreat at *Sans Souci* described, 92.

Friendship, real happiness only to be found in the arms of it, 10 ; cannot be purchased by wealth, nor procured without its proper premium, 11 ; the pretenders to it how to be treated, 70 ; nothing so fair as virtuous friendship, 87 ; when only pretended, is frequently guilty

I N D E X.

guilty of malevolence, 94 ; is the medicine of life, 133 ; and one of the most material ingredients in the cup of human happiness, 307.

G.

Garve enjoyed Solitude without its disadvantages, 121.

Genius, inspired by rural scenery, 145.

Goëthe, his observation on kindness, 130.

Good-nature, a quality that wins the heart, 118.

Golden Fleece, its signification, 71.

Gordon, Lord George, his character described, and an account given of the riots he caused in *London* in the year 1780, 149, 153.

Grotius, his reason why God created man for the purposes of society, 2.

Gypsies, practice of these itinerants in Germany, 9.

H.

Happiness, not to be found in a vague, desultory, and indiscriminate intercourse with the world, 4 ; can only be attained by laudable pursuits, 304 ; only to be truly enjoyed in the bosom of Love and in the arms of Friendship, 307 ; a prize worth contending for, 312 ; the idea of being able to enjoy it by ourselves visionary, 314 ; its path described, 314, 315.

Haller, subject to a religious melancholy, 190, 202 ; addicted to an excessive use of opium, 196 ; listened to the evil doctrines of fanatical priests, 197 ; his notions of Christianity, 198 ; his apprehensions of death, 199, 201.

I N D E X.

Hermits, the unsatisfactory nature of their enjoyments, 3; always discontented with themselves, 3, notis; the extravagance of *St. Anthony*, 138; are characters contrary to the order of nature, 313.

Heraclitus, the obscure and crying philosopher, his character and conduct described, 26.

History, an account of the fate of the first publication of *Hume's History of England*, 62.

Homer, the noble images with which his works abound afforded relief to the affliction of *Zenobia* in Solitude, 42; fond of Retirement, 309, notis.

Horace preferred Solitude at his villa at *Tiber*, near the lake *Albunea*, to the court of Augustus, 38.

Hume, David, his history, 54; account of his literary transactions, 59; his disappointments, 60; the publication and fate of his writings, 61; their ultimate success, 64, notis.

Hurd, his pamphlet against *Hume's Natural History of Religion*, 63.

Hypochondria is one of the motives to Solitude, 46; because it renders the patient incapable of enjoying the pleasures of the world, 48; spleen, a species of *Hypochondria*, 48; a cure for it, 48; joy flies from the approach of this distemper, 49; it leads to madness, and to death, 50; *Cowley*, the English poet, subject to this disorder, 50, notis.

I & J

Jerome, the faint, attained his rich, animated and sublime style of eloquence in Solitude, 89; his history, 90, notis; his sensible address to his solitary brethren in the deserts of *Thebais*, 259.

Imagination,

I N D E X.

Imagination, its effects on the human mind, 137; the influence which Solitude has on this power, 141; its effects on the conduct of life highly important, 142; its operation, 143; produces enthusiasm, 143; in what case Solitude not unfriendly to it, 171.

Indignation difficult to be restrained against artful hypocrites, 68; the indulgence of it improper, 69; highly excited by the intrigues and misconduct of courtiers, 73.

Indolence, irksome to its possessors, and intolerable to others, 13; arises from our endeavours to fly from ourselves, 14, notis; ill suited to the cure of the spleen, 48; more fatal than excess of action, 110; the character of a lazy man described, 111; *Montaigne's* opinion of it, 111, notis; always restless, 274; inflicts the severest torments on the soul, 274; instances of its being provoked to great frenzy, 275; the cruelties of which it is capable, 277; its dangerous effects in Solitude, 295; the endeavour of all wise legislators to prevent it, 297; its danger in a political view, 298.

Industry the school of Virtue, 302.

Johnson, Dr. his opinion of Solitude, 26, notis; 30, notis; of *Cowley's* desire of Solitude, 50, notis; of the errors to which a solitary person may be exposed, 97; of the fondness for self-opinion produced by Solitude, 115, notis; his notion of death, 200.

Ingratitude, its effects upon the feelings, 78, 80, 84.

Joseph, the emperor, expresses to *Baron Grothaus* his anxiety for rural Retirement, 36.

Joy is artificial, and may be created; it may subsist without thought, and gives a momentary flash to pleasure,

I N D E X.

14, notis; must have self-approbation for its root, *ibid*; it is a fixed state; a tenure; not a start, 16; a certain impulse in every heart to catch the phantom of ideal joy, 18.

K

Kindness is the golden chain by which Society is bound together, 130; is not always shewn by men of fashion to the awkwardness of studious men, 131.

L

Laura, her person, described, 246; the affection she excited in the bosom of *Petrarch*, 247.

Learning can only render its possessor happy in proportion as he employs it for the benefit of others, 118; not synonymous with wisdom, 119; when most meritorious, 136.

Letters, the effect which Solitude is apt to produce on the characters and dispositions of men of letters, 146; originally invented by Love, 235.

Leibnitz, an anecdote respecting him, 12; a man of uncommon capacity, 12, notis; pursued his studies at a beautiful villa near *Hanover*, 100.

Liberty, the desire of enjoying it drives men into Solitude, 31; for it is one of the most powerful affections of the human mind, 45; the greatest of human blessings, 320.

Locke, his description of enthusiasm, 147.

Longinus, the prime minister of *Zenobia*, put to death by the emperor *Aurelian*, 43.

Lord's

I N D E X.

Lord's Prayer, the use of repeating it upon certain occasions, 211.

Love, one of the chief sources of social happiness, 5; when chaste, civilizes mankind, 6; its victims always seek Solitude as a solace to their sufferings, 7; when pure, leads the mind to Religion, 100; its power, 226; the folly of endeavouring to resist its effects by retiring from the world, 227; a passion that, when pure, never experiences any decay, 227; instanced in the story of *Abelard* and *Eloisa*, 228; in the story of *Petrarch* and *Laura*, 246; observations of the different nature of the passions of these celebrated lovers, 248; a story illustrating the extraordinary and irresistible power of the passion of Love, 249, 257; dangerous to health when indulged to excess, 258; the kind produced by Solitude, 260; has no power, except on those it catches unemployed, 302; the great promoter of human happiness, 307; increased by discreet retirement, 309, notis.

Lucian, his description of *Timon's* invectives against the Athenians, 81.

M

Magna civitas, magna solitudo, 24, notis.

Malice continually employed in blunting the force of merit, 53, 67.

Marriage recommended, 262; an eulogy on wedded love, 263, 286.

Maximian, his pursuit of power condemned by the emperor *Dioclesian*, 41.

Melancholy, Solitude very ill suited to its relief, 109, 179;

I N D E X.

- 179; its earliest symptoms described, 173; the indulgence of it frequently pleasing, 174; the way it should be treated, 174; its different effects on English and French minds, 175; its general effects, 176; described by Shakespeare, 176, notis; its views and consequences, 177; described by Melmoth, 178, notis; its character, 180; sometimes not perceptible by observers, 182; its power, 183; when caused by Religion, 190; how to be relieved, 190.
- Mendelssohn* derived great advantages from Solitude, 121.
- Miebm*, the celebrated professor of the science of music, an anecdote respecting him, 123.
- Milton*, his eulogy on wedded love, 262.
- Mind*, is sometimes so constructed that no kind of discipline can eradicate its errors, 107.
- Misanthropy*, an unnatural disposition of mind, 1; it is immoral to encourage it, 2, notis; those who indulge it, always unhappy, 3; cured by love and friendship, 5; frequently the consequence of disappointed ambition, 7; descriptions of its effects, 26, notis, 49, 79; *Cowley*, the English poet, subject to this disorder, 50, notis; the language of this complaint as described by *Shakespeare*, 77; *St. Hyacinth* its victim, 77; a description of a misanthropist in a private character known to the author, 79; in the character of *Timon of Athens*, 80.
- Monastic Institutions*, their mischiefs described, 258, 283, 287.
- Monastic Solitude*, its bad effects on the human mind, 161; its consequences on the mind of *Eloisa*, 244; how much it depraves the finer passions of the heart, 261.
- Monks,*

I N D E X.

Monks, their fury when roused from their laziness into action, 278; their faculties debased by their partialities to the interests of their orders, 284; their profligacy, 287, 289; their disorders contributed to the Reformation, 290.

Montaigne, his opinion of the efficacy of Solitude with respect to Religion, 47, notis, 105: in order to avoid examples of vice, 52, notis; his observations respecting indolence, 111, notis.

Molanus, his mind so disturbed by intense application, that he fancied himself a barley-corn, 162.

N

Nature, the real propensities of it never injurious, 258; the necessity of checking her superinduced appetites, 266; abhors a vacuum, 298.

Naude, the author of a work on the dancing of the ancients, an anecdote respecting him, 123.

Nervous Complaints, their dreadful effects, 189; in the case of a young lady, 192; in another case of a similar kind, 194; in the case of a native of Geneva, 203; in the person of *Zimmerman* himself, 208.

Nicole, a ludicrous instance of the effect of awkwardness, and ignorance of good breeding, in the person of this celebrated mathematician, 123.

Nans, the nuns of a number of convents seized with the disorder of mewling like cats, 163; and of biting, 164; the envy, hatred and malice which generally prevail among them, 225; the sorrows they feel, 226; their

I N D E X.

their licentious conduct, 289 ; incorrigible, 290 ; corrupted by the laziness of their lives, 303.

Nuptial State, opinion of the ancient fathers on it, 264.

O

Obstinacy is frequently the effect of Solitude, 114.

Odenathus, the husband of *Zenobia*, murdered, 43, notis.

Opinions, the publication of novel opinions generally alarming, 67.

Opium, the manner of collecting it, 196 ; its deleterious qualities described, 197.

Orators, who only exercise their eloquence for purposes of ostentation, seldom long admired, 71 ; the oratory of *Bossus* commended, 289.

Orlow, the Russian prince, visits *Zimmerman* at *Pyrmont*, 210 ; receives from him a curious prescription to cure inordinate desires, 211.

P

Paley, archdeacon of *Carlisle*, has exposed the false principles of *Mr. Hume*, in his *Evidences of Christianity*, 58, notis.

Pain is the consequence of misconduct, 4.

Passions, a method of checking their turbulence, 210 ; the influence of Solitude on them, 215 ; their extraordinary powers, 217.

Pedantry

I N D E X.

Pedantry condemned, 135.

Pascal, his notion of quietude, 33.

Paul, of *Venice*, the only person educated in a cloister that was superior to its prejudices, 284.

Pericles, his opinion of the necessity of industry, 297.

Petrarch, his notion of fame, 71 ; his description of the malevolence of pretended friendship, 95 ; his affection for *Laura* described, 246 ; flies into Solitude with the hope of reducing its violence, 248 ; chuses the retreat of *Vaucluse* ; returns again into Society, 311 ; purchases a beautiful villa near *Parma*, 332 ; his rational use of Solitude, 333 ; his description of its charms, 334.

Plato, his writings afford consolation to *Zenobia* in her retirement, 42 ; his sublime theories not conceived among the noisy feasts of *Dionysius*, 98 ; his conduct and character, 98, notis ; his opinion of the effects of Solitude, 114 ; free from all ostentatious pedantry, 112 ; a story respecting the urbanity of his manners, 113 ; of opinion that women are the nurses of fanaticism, 167.

Platonists, the absurd doctrines of this sect ascribable to the influence of Solitude, 165.

Pleasure, every rational pursuit too frequently sacrificed to it, 9 ; when excessive, destroys the happiness of its votaries, 11 ; a mean stimulous to rouse the soul to activity, 14 ; its votaries incapable of rational Retirement, 15 ; it is necessary to vary it, 112.

Posterity generally does justice to real merit, 95.

Poverty an unconquerable bar to success, 59.

Pisistratus,

I N D E X.

Pisistratus, his conduct towards *Solon*, 72 ; his endeavours to prevent idleness, 296, 297.

Proterus, the manner in which he was deposed by *Timotheus* and the rebellious monks of Egypt, 275.

Public Places are the machineries of pleasure, 15 ; the inconveniencies which sometimes attend them, 209 ; the sort of pleasure they afford, 316, notis.

Puffendorf, his reasons why man was intended by his Creator rather for a social than a solitary life, 1.

Pyrrhus sighs for tranquillity, 33 ; his character and conduct described, 34, notis.

Q

Quirinus, the church of this saint incapable of affording protection to *Proterus* against the fury of the rebel monks led on by *Timotheus*, 277.

R

Religion has been too often drawn in disagreeable colours, 20 ; solid benefits to be derived from the practice of it, 21 ; the opportunity of practising its precepts an inducement to retire from the world, 47 ; *Montaigne's* opinion on this subject, 47, notis ; its interests said to have suffered from the philosophical works of *David Hume*, 58 ; its benign genius disposes the mind to Retirement, 100 ; is the offspring of Truth and Love, 100 ; is not confined to cells and cloisters, 101 ; its effects

I N D E X.

effects in Retirement, 102; excellency of the Christian system, 165; extremes in it ought to be avoided, 169; alleviates melancholy, 203; its perfection described, 292, 293.

Religious Melancholy aggravated by Solitude, 190.

Republicanism, and instance of the absurdity of its principles when carried to excess, 67.

Resignation, when necessary, 322.

Retirement is of a nature too refined for vulgar minds, 15; affords favourable moments for the practice of piety, 21; the real lover of it must be an extraordinary character, 23, 97; it confirms the principles of virtue, 24; the motions which generally lead to it, 30; the greatest men enjoy it most, 33; must be sought with a chearful mind, 85; its effects described, 86; is the true school of philosophy both with respect to morals and manners, 92; and the kind nurse of Nature's powers, 97; its important effects in a religious point of view, 102; its advantages and disadvantages will always be proportionate to the degree of virtue or vice possessed by its votaries, 108; how to be enjoyed, 307; when it becomes our duty, 323; its advantages in improving the powers of the mind, 327; may be enjoyed without removing far from town, 331.

Riots, the cause and consequences of those which happened in *London* in the year, 1780, 149, 153.

Roussseau, an account of his melancholy disposition, 184; the ill treatment he received, 185, 187; his character, 188.

INDEX.

S

Satyrus, the Athenian actor, improves, by his judicious recitation of a passage from *Euripides*, the elocution of *Demosthenes* while a student of oratory, 89.

Scipio Africanus sought Solitude during the intervals of public business, 36; his character and conduct, 37, notis.

Scholars, their general character described, 119, 122.

Self-denial, the necessity of it inculcated, 266, notis.

Self-interest, those who too closely follow its dictates are generally unhappy, 133.

Shaftsbury, Lord, his observations on the force of fancy, 139; on the effect of enthusiasm, 144; on the consequences of Solitude, 245, notis.

Shakespeare, his description of the language of *Timon*, 77; his description of melancholy, 176, notis.

Slander generally defeats itself, 71; the best characters the most frequent objects of its shafts, 53.

Socrates, his observation on travelling, 108, notis; rendered his morals pleasing, 129; appears as if he were receiving the instruction he imparts, 130.

SOLITUDE, the definition of it, 1; conversation qualifies the mind for it, 7; is frequently unfriendly to sorrow, 19; is terrible to those whose virtue is not founded on right principles, 19; or whom vice has betrayed into guilt, 20; is capable of affording the highest comforts to rational and religious minds, 21; the necessity of devoting a certain portion of our time to it,

I N D E X.

21 ; the motives which lead men to it, 23 ; the man who is really attached to it must be an extraordinary character, 24 ; how to render it serviceable, 25 ; the character of those who cannot endure it, 26 ; of those who are prepared for the enjoyment of it, 29 ; the love of it by those who possess genius, 30 ; love of liberty is the foundation of the love of Solitude, 31 ; sought by those who are engaged in pursuits unsuited to their inclination, 31 ; *Hypochondria* induces men to seek it, 46 ; so does a strong sense of religion, 47 ; so do the erroneous opinions of the world, 51 ; it is in general sought by the highest characters, 73 ; particularly by the heroes of *Rome* and *Athens*, 89 ; that of the King of Prussia at *Sans Souci* described, 92 ; is frequently sought from an inclination to improve the intellectual faculties, 93 ; religion and fanaticism frequently lead men into Solitude, 100 ; the disposition to it influenced greatly by the temper and constitution, 105 ; *its disadvantages considered*, 107 ; does not of itself eradicate unworthy passions, 108, *notis* ; renders the character rigid, austere, inflexible, and unsocial, 113 ; the mind dangerously confident and the disposition obstinate, 114 ; its effects on men of letters, 116 ; *its influence on the imagination*, 137 ; on fanatical minds, 159 ; its effects on the female mind, 163 ; strange instances of its effects upon the nuns of certain convents, 163 ; under what circumstances it is friendly to the indulgence of imagination, 170 ; *its effects on a melancholy mind*, 173 ; painful to those who possess erroneous notions of religion, 203 ; never renders well-regulated minds melancholy, 213 ; its influence
on

I N D E X.

on the passions, 215; its effects as to the passion of love, 245; the danger of being idle in it, 295; should be made to relieve or be mixed with the pleasures of Society, 305; in the extreme unnatural, 313; frequently sought for the purpose of serving mankind more essentially, 317, 318; what characters seek it, 318, 319; what characters may enjoy it without danger, 321; it strengthens the mental powers, 327; only injurious when carried to excess, 328, 329; when indiscreet, leads to misery, 335; but when rational, to happiness, 336.

Solon, his conduct with respect to the ingratitude of his country, 72; his laws against idleness, 296.

Social Happiness only to be found in the bosom of Love, and in the arms of Friendship, 5; frequently destroyed by being too eagerly pursued, 8; not to be found in convents, 286; in what manner it ought to be pursued, 308.

Society the earliest impulse and most powerful inclination of our hearts, 4; a state pregnant with danger, 4; the pleasures of it must be pure to be permanent, 4; its pleasures capable of affording sublime enjoyments to the wise and virtuous, 17; properly chosen, is productive of the highest advantages, 18; causes of disgust against it, 76; the advantages which men of letters may derive from it, 126, 127; to be enjoyed with Solitude, 306; man has no right to recede from it, 306, notis; life intolerable without it, 315; the interests of Virtue not to be sacrificed to the enjoyment of it, 317.

Social Virtue excluded from cloisters, 224.

Sorrow

I N D E X.

- Sorrow* frequently drives men from Solitude to Society, 19; to be relieved by public diversions, where it has incapacitated the mind from enjoying the pleasures of contemplation, 26, notis; the most virtuous and steady minds cannot always suppress it, 32.
- Speech*, the gift of it a principal reason that man was born a social being, 1; for if he had been intended a solitary being, speech would have been unnecessary, 6.
- Spleen*, the several cures for it, 48.
- Statesmen*, the great delight and advantage they derive from occasional Retirement, 32.
- Suicide*, the causes from which it frequently arises, 178, notis.
- Superstition*, the strange and ridiculous absurdities it engenders in the mind, 161; is the altar upon which Reason is sacrificed, 165; a capital source of delusion, 169; cured by acquiring a knowledge of the true religion, 193.

T

- Tantalus*, his joys like those which worldly pleasure affords, 17.
- Temperance*, its effects on the spirits, 112.
- Temptation*, a story illustrating the danger of it, 249; ought always to be avoided, 257.
- Thought*, the labour of it too violent to last long, 145.
- Tillotson*, his works the best antidote against religious melancholy, 191.
- Timon*, the celebrated misanthropist of *Athens*, his character and conduct described, 80.

I N D E X.

- Timotheus*, the Egyptian monk, surnamed *the Cat*, excites his monks to assist him in deposing *Proterus*, 275.
Theodosius, the Roman emperor, receives and honours the ashes of *St. Chrysostom*, 283, notis.
Tranquillity the general wish of mankind, 33.
Truth, a love of it leads to Religion, 100.

V

- Vaucluse*, the celebrated Solitude of Petrarch, 309; a description of its situation and beauties, 310.
Vice, in the corrupted currents of the world, frequently wears the mask of Virtue, 7; incapable of being truly chearful, 14, notis; but may occasionally force itself into bursts of seeming joy, 16; it is the source of sorrow, 20; cannot endure Solitude, or any species of Retirement, 24; and by this means discovers itself, 26, notis; sees the happiness of others with hatred, 84; is not eradicated merely by Solitude, 107; rather increased by it, 109.
Virgil fond of Retirement, 309, notis.
Virtue, generally disregarded by men of pleasure, 5; the only true foundation of happiness, 7; experiences a sublime enjoyment in Solitude, 17, 22; in danger from the vicious examples of the world, 52; instance of its effects on old age, 69; the world to be neglected for its sake, 70, 91, notis; its good effects described, 128, 293; greatly promoted by industry, 300, 302; not to be sacrificed for the purposes of enjoying Society, 317; its character described, 318, notis; how affected by a life of Solitude, 330.

I N D E X

U.

Urbanity, its pleasing effects illustrated in an anecdote respecting the manners of *Plato*, 120, 121.

W.

Wieland, who is said to be the child of the Muses, formed the extraordinary powers of his mind in Solitude, 96 ; an author who rendered morals pleasing, 129.

Winter, dreadful to those who cannot bear their own reflections, 9.

Wisdom, though sometimes confounded with *Learning*, is by no means synonymous with it, 119.

Woman would have been unnecessary in the creation if man had been intended a solitary being, 1 ; more subject than man to the delusions of disordered fancy, 162 ; the nurses of fanaticism, 167 ; the necessity of their being constantly employed, 302.

World, the pleasures of it unsatisfactory, 4 ; is the only theatre upon which great and noble actions can be performed, 17 ; its erroneous opinions and egregious prejudices drive certain characters into Solitude, 51 ; disgusting to those who have lived in Retirement, 325.

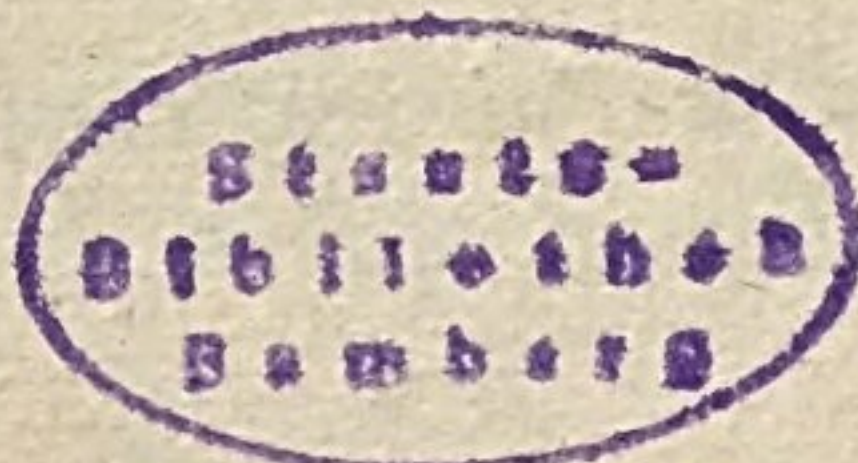
Z

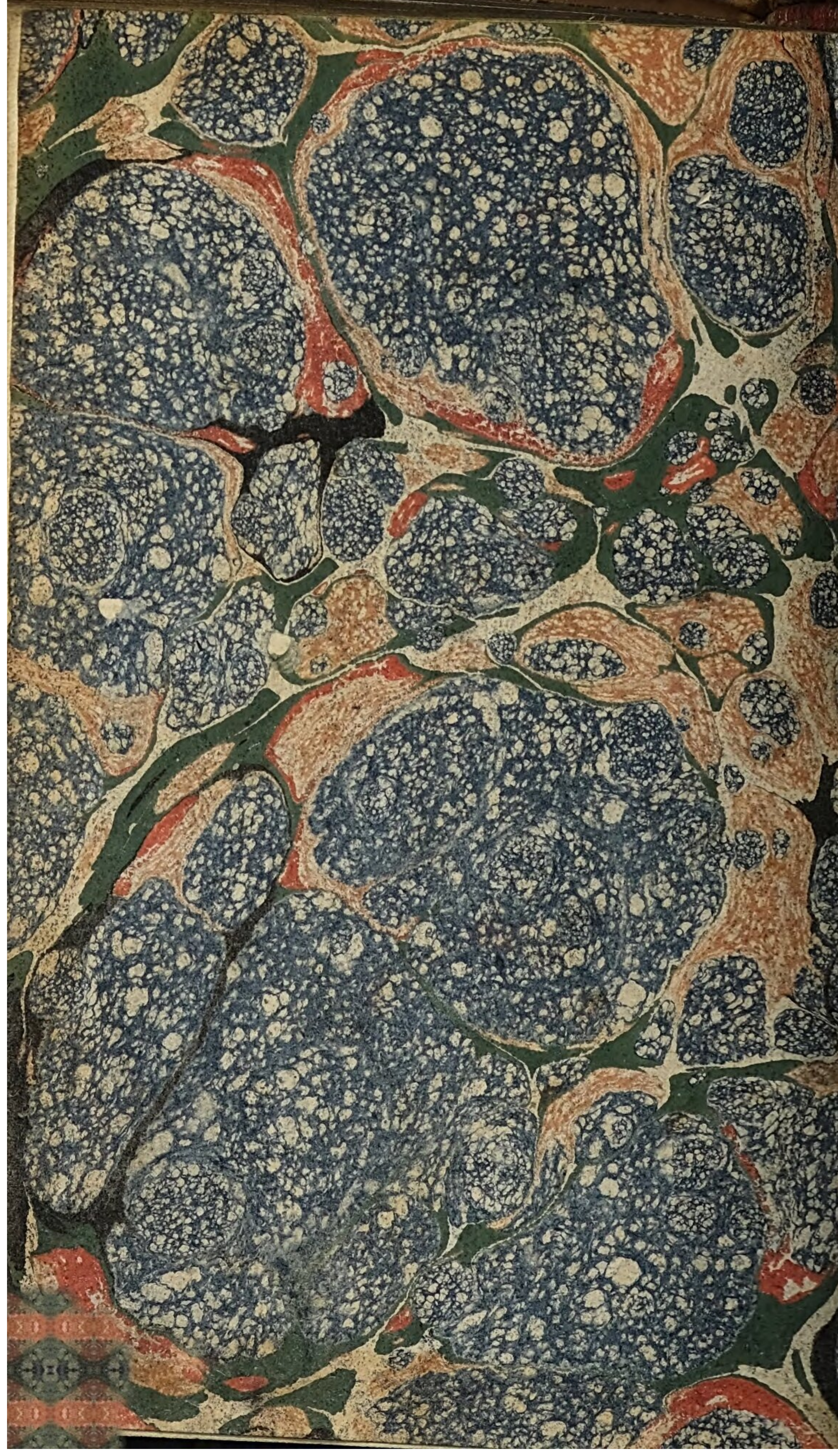
Zenobia, queen of *Palmyra*, the story of her misfortunes and retirement, 41.

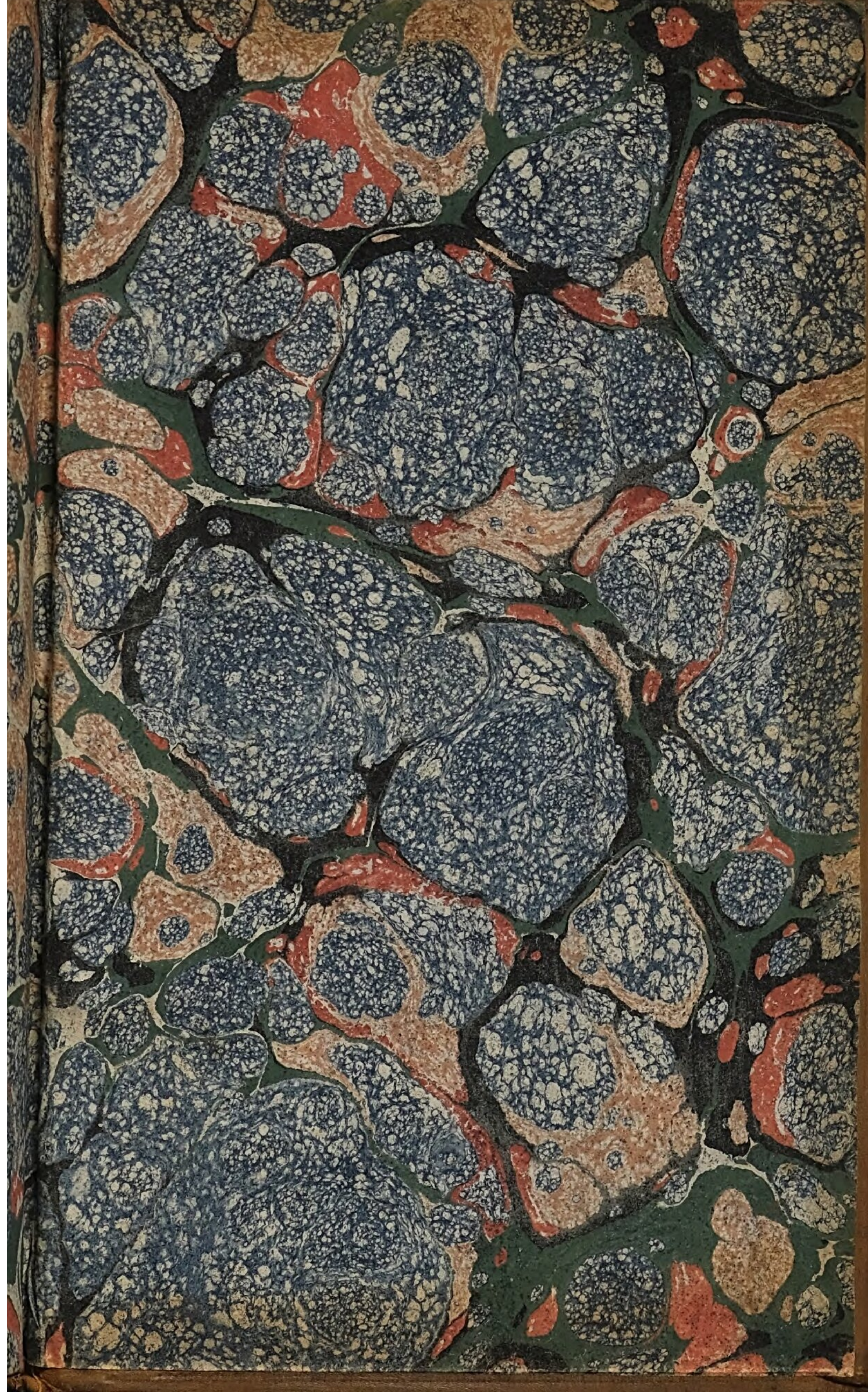
INDEX.

ZIMMERMAN, the method he took to cure religious despondency, 192, 194 ; and a nervous debility accompanied with melancholy, 203 ; his liability to low spirits, 208 ; incapacity to administer to a mind diseased, 209 ; receives a visit from Prince *Orlow*, 210 ; his advice to the prince how to cure the violence of desire, 211 ; his profession of the principles upon which this work was written, 305 ; exhorts his readers to seek the pleasures of rational Retirement, but not to renounce Society, 337.

Printed by Thomas Maiden,
Sherbourne-Lane.









Zimmermann, Johann Georg,

Solitude

Bd.: Vol. II

1805

Bamberg, Staatsbibliothek -- L.g.o.903-a(2)
urn:nbn:de:bvb:12-bsb11723411-3